

Boston University College of Tiberal Arts Library the Huthor 378.74 THE GIFT OF BO C. 52103

BOSTON UNIVERSITY

GRADUATE SCHOOL

Thesis

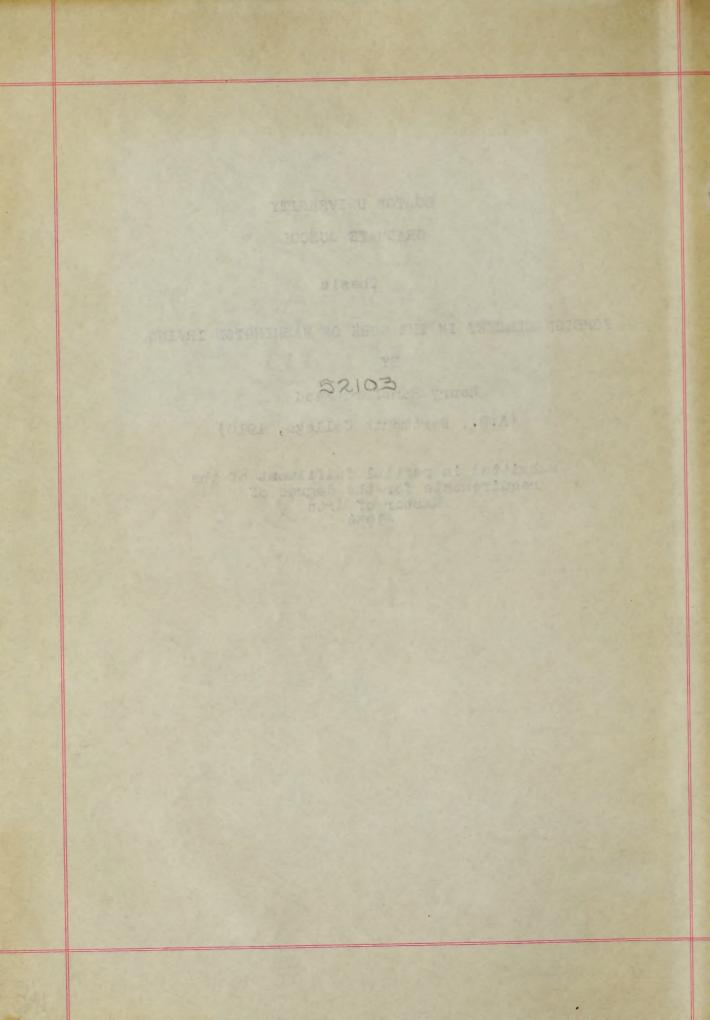
FOREIGN ELEMENT IN THE WORK OF WASHINGTON IRVING

BY

Henry Ransford Reed

(A.B., Dartmouth College, 1910)

submitted in partial fulfilment of the requirements for the degree of Master of Arts 1934



INDEX VOLUME ONE

PAGE
INTRODUCTIONl
Purpose of the Studyl
Scope of the Thesisl
Importance of Subject2
GRADUAL DEVELOPMENT OF THE COSMOPOLITAN SPIRIT
First European Visit4
Second European Visit
THE SKETCH BOOK
CRITICAL ESTIMATE OF THE SKETCH BOOK
BRACEBRIDGE HALL
CRITICAL ESTIMATE OF BRACEBRIDGE HALL43
CONTINENTAL RAMBLINGS
TALES OF A TRAVELLER
CRITICAL ESTIMATE OF TALES OF A TRAVELLER
IRVING TURNS HISTORIAN
THE LIFE AND VOYAGES OF CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS
CRITICAL ESTIMATE OF THE LIFE AND VOYAGES OF CHRISTOPHER
COLUMBUS
VOYAGES OF THE COMPANIONS OF COLUMBUS124
CRITICAL ESTIMATE OF THE VOYAGES OF THE COMPANIONS OF
COLUMBUS
IRVING'S REACTION TO SPANISH HISTORY AND PEOPLE

DACE

Excention and a second and a second a Survey and the for the second Preserver and a second second second second second Contraction and a statement of the statement and the statement and a statement of the state Construction and a second and a second and a second and a second S..... The BEFTHURS OF THE SECON FOR MALE AND THE SECONDER STREET, AND THE SECONDER STREET, ST Cherron ST ALLESS LADITAR SOTTRASDATE SO 27 ALLESS LADITARD FT. THE STREET OF THE STREET STREE AT. BERETER STREET, STREE LEVING'S REACTION TO TRANIGH BISTORY AND REGILLS................

FOREIGN ELEMENT IN THE WORK OF WASHINGTON IRVING

INTRODUCTION

Purpose of the Study

The purpose of this thesis is to reveal the foreign element in the literary works of Washington Irving and to trace the relationship between this element and his long residence abroad. The Practical Standard Dictionary defines "element" as " a component or essential part". For the purposes of this thesis, the word "element" will be used as defined above.

Of the several qualities of personality which peculiarly distinguish the author, particularly the author who approaches his work in the romantic spirit, none is more significant than a sensibility to the ideal and the picturesque. If he possesses also a generosity of concept and a vision of life sufficiently broad to lift him above the common prujudices and misconceptions, so that he attains not only a disinterested judicial attitude but a sympathetic one as well, his estimate of humankind, be it man or nation, will achieve genuine worth and distinctive charm. He serves as an interpreter of life, it is true, but he accomplishes far more than the limitations of that role would permit. The very essence of his accomplishment is creWIVEL MOTOVINEAR NO RECY CHE ME MANALY MOISED!

MOINDUCCMINI

1

what out to economic

The purpose of this that's is to reveal the foreign ofsecut in the literary works of Washington Irving and to trans the relationship between this element and his long weidence strond. The Fractical Atundari Dictionary defines "element" as a comparent or suportial part". For the purposes of the the

OF the nevial publicies of personality anich reculted of the deviat publicies of personality anich reculted als more in the nomentic spirit, none is when algoritored bien a section in the remarkle spirit, none is when algoritored bien also a scarcesty of concept and a vision of life sufficiently used to lift bie above the concept and a vision of life sufficiently as the trained of allows and a vision of life sufficiently and a the status not confer a distribute of banks and of a specification of as well, to estimate of bankshed, be i and or mation, will achieve of life, it is true, but he confer plistes for ence the limitations of the true, but he conferplistes for ence the limitations of the true, but he conferation of the very scance of life, it is true, but he conferplistes for ence the limitations of the true, but he conferplies a set of he limitations of life, it is true, but he conferation of the very scance of he distributes is and distributed at the true of the limitations of the true, but he conferative, not in the narrow sense of merely expressing himself upon paper, but in the far greater function of building up a comprehension and understanding of viewpoints and characteristics, an indispensible prerequisite to the growth of goodwill between nations or individuals. The possession of these qualities and recognition of them, as expressed in his writings, gave Washington Irving his position as one of the foremost writers of the English-speaking world in the first half of the nineteenth century.

SCOPE OF THESIS

Only the works of Washington Irving which show the influence of his residence abroad will be considered in this thesis.

IMPORTANCE OF SUBJECT

The significance of Washington Irving's long residence in Europe and his intimate contacts with her literary, social and political leaders cannot be over-estimated in any appraisal of his literary work. A careful study of his journals and memoranda; the conclusions of those who have made his life and work the subject of painstaking research; most of the works of Washington Irving themselves; all reflect the impress of his long life abroad.

GRADUAL DEVELOPMENT OF THE COSMOPOLITAN SPIRIT

-2-

abive, not in the neares series of world engressing Mareir upon poper, but in the for menter function of Suliding op a comprehension with indematencing of vieweoldts and submater istics, on indispensible presequisite to the growth of roodwill between mathems of individuals. The persenation of these sullbies and recomplition of these, as expressed in the foreiner, fave Weshington leving his contains one on the foreiner, fave Weshington leving his contains on the foretion files, and recomplisher of the second in the foretion of the mineters of the Individual one of the forepost with the file individual one of the foretion with the mineters of the Individual one of the foretion with the mineters of the Individual one of the fore-

SCOLE OF PIESDES

Shoals the sorts of sanisting on Trying which the tafluence of his residence chrond will be sound fauge in this , thoses.

spanara ng pagan Kana

The stynificance of Result to minimum long residence in Surope and its intimate contects with how literary, social and political leaders cannot be over-estimated in any aparelsel of his literary socie. A careful study of his journals and memorenes the conclusions of these who have ands his life and more the subject of painthing research; and, of his point of Masimuten Twing theselves; all reflect the light of his life lone life encoderes.

TRADUCTION DATE OF THE ALL DATE OF THE PAUL AND A DATE OF THE PAUL A

To a considerable extent inherited qualities of mind and careful early training prepared Washington Irving to play a distinguished part in the best society on the Continent and in England. His father, a leading merchant of New York, established his family upon a firm social and financial basis. His mother was a woman of unusual charm and intelligence. Young Irving received the best instruction available at various private schools of the city. He was by no means an eager student, following his own inclination for books of a romantic or adventurous type, and neglecting subjects of a more utilitarian appeal.

Courtesy and refinement were innate qualities of character, but careful instruction in the formal deportment of the period, an unusual charm of appearance and poise of manner, and a genuine and enthusiastic interest in everything and everyone about him, endeared him to all.

Irving possessed a considerable degree of artistic skill. His notebooks are filled with sketches and caricatures of scenes and people encountered at home and abroad. He had likewise an appreciative ear for music and a keen interest in the theatre. Thus it will be seen that Washington Irving possessed those arts and graces calculated to impress the sophisticated society of European capitals. Yet his personal modesty and kindness prevented the least assumption of superiority and he never abandoned his loyalty to the democratic principles of his beloved America.

-3-

one bile of setting believent interes of anteres a

establish don't training prevayed Variantities invites to play a minting data of the the best society on the forming and in sectors. His stand, a leading verbination of the level, echanishes the family were adding verbinate of the visit, echanishes a social of unmanal charts and tabilitence, rouge leving measive the best independent staticals of verbour refyrets nonocle of the only. Is and by no means an esser wouldnet, following his sem instituction and to a search whill be a formation of the constants and refined and a statical of a secondary the only. Is and by no means an esser wouldnet, following his sem instituction and to a search whill be a secondary compassion of a secondary of the secondary, and and and the secondary of the secondary, and an end of a secondary of the secondary, and a statical of a secondary of the secondary, and an and the of the result of a secondary and and a statical of a secondary of the secondary, and a statical of a secondary of the secondary, and and a statical of the result of the secondary and the and estimation of the toward of a secondary and the and estimation of the toward of a second a secondary and prime back of a secondary of the secondary of the secondary of the secondary and the and estimation of the toward of a secondary of a secondary of the sec

Invirs measured a ponal erable wire of applicite cill. Its interbooks are dilled alki abticles of a wisthree of scan and robile phonumered at home at sorrer. In ind likelie ch an insatistive can for much and been internet in the lighter interity will be neer that the listing interacted these interity of the astronated of interaction invirg interacted these of interact of the list personal construction of the interpreview the local behavior of the interaction of the interact of interact of the list personal construction of the interacpreview the local base best and the interact of the of the local base of the interaction of the interacbe addined the local to be the desceration of the interact in the interact of the list desceration of the interaction of the interact is addined the local to be desceration of the interaction of the interact

FIRST EUROPEAN VISIT

-4-

The subtle influence of physical infirmity is often evident in the life of Washington Irving.It manifested itself at the age of twenty-one, when threatened tuberculosis made a sea voyage imperative. The weeks at sea wrought a remarkable improvement and when he landed at Bordeau he was eagerly anticipatory of the delights of adventure in strange lands.

As a direct stimulus to literary creativeness, his wanderings on the Continent and in England seemed without immediate result. Irving wrote none of his sketches or tales while abroad at this time. But his travels did unquestionably broaden the horizen and stimulate the romantic imagination of the future author. His letters at this time make little mention of the political and social upheaval of Europe during the Napoleonic conquest, but he is constantly studying picturesque character types and absorbing the history and atmosphere of the countries he visits. He is deeply impressed with the historic grandeur of Rome. He reacts with youthful delight to the spell of Paris, "the brilliancy of the theatres, 2 operas, etc., the beauty of the public walks, the gaiety, good humor, and universal politeness of the people, and the perfect liberty of private conduct."

Pierre M. Irving, Life and Letters of Washington Irving, Vol.1, p.1 Ibid. p. 150.

1

The analic influence of systemi influency is often ovident in the life of a instant fring. It anti-fore if and is the set of tracts-one, see the chard theorem one made a set voyage bases for the first of the first of and exclude instants in the set of the strate of a set of an exclusive instants of the set of a land.

The A diverse fittering in litering are diverses, dis managing on the Consider and in 20 literin seconds of the immediate reading. In the travel were of the another or take with stread at this time, but his bravels all connection in the urbane of the horizer and estrulate the prevale all connection in this is and the horizer and estrulate the prevale all connections ditate matches of the oblighter and estrulate the preval ditate matches of the oblighter, but he is constantly studing and the horizer balance and another the the state of the state and the thread of the oblighter and another the the state distance of the former the constants in the second up of the distance of the constants of the state of the transmitter another of the constants of the state of the transmitter another of the second of the preside of the transmitter another of the second of the preside of the the transmitter another of the second of the spatial of the transmitter another, and universal conducts of the spatial splite works, so another, and universal conducts of the splite splite, and the period difference.

1. Phornesil. Irving, tite and isprere of Pas builton Trying, Vo.-1. P.

His criticism of the London theatre is independent and enlightened. He writes: "Kemble appears to me to be a very studied actor. His performances throughout evince deep study and application, joined to amazingly judicious conception. They are correct and highly-finished paintings, but much labored."

1

2

-5-

Of the famous Mrs. Siddons he has this to say: "Were I to indulge without reserve in my praises of Mrs. Siddons, I am afraid you would think them hyperbolical. What a donderful woman! The very first time I saw her perform, I was struck with admiration. It was in the part of Calista. Her looks, her voice, her gestures, delighted me. She penetrated in a moment to my heart. She froze and melted it by turns; a glance of her eye, a start, an exclamation, thrilled my whole frame. And yet this woman is old, and has lost all elegance of figure."

Irving kept no journal while in Paris or London. His attitude at this time is that of the pleasure-seeker, the penetrating observer, who is content to receive impressions, but evinces no desire to turn them to literary account. But mind and imagination were stimulated by these new experiences, though the incentive to profit by them remained to be developed at a later day. If his first European voyage failed to attract Irving to the profession of letters, it certainly did make sufficiently lasting impression to induce him instinctively

Pierre M. Irving, Life and Letters of Washington Irving, V.1, p.156.
Ibid. p. 159.

Statisticasi. He writes: "consider in brindladte is independent and still differed. He writes: "consider contrasts to m to te a very studied actor. He writes: "consider throughout evines done avery and contracts. Joined to milles!" indicions donesphine. They are correct and dignir-field withing, but mich tobored."

to inside the taxous has. Siddent is had bein to and: "dre I to inside withing treaters in it in indees of in. Discond, I an events you would then the hypermolitors. This adontarful wirned the very first bins I set her postors, I was abruck with an intruction. It was in the part of deliate. Her looks, ber volce has pectures, delighted at. She postrated in a soment to nate heast. She from and called it by burns; a claud of her cys, a start, an exclamation, theilied in whole frame. and you a wint the side from the called in whole frame. And you a boatt. She from and called it by burns; a claud of her cys.

Institute topic no fournel while in faith or London, his eviltute at this fits is that of the Hadame-Aceran, his youestating observer, when a content to incorve increations, hut wind in chestes to there from the literer account, but pland and in chestes to the fact the plane new coordent, but pland there is chester to be actual at the or account, but pland and in chester to be route by these new coordents to be developed to a infer the institut Europeen royage failed to attall the is contracted at the listers, it certainly his rate institution when instead to to induce us institution in a state of the first europeen royage failed to attally instituted to be the instead of the induce us institution in the institute instead to to induce us institution to be

List, 1.V. mint, int. and letters of Washington Trving, V.1. 7.15

to return to Europe at a later period for further inspiration. Washington Irving left England on Jan. 17, 1806, landing at New York after a stormy passage of sixty-four days.

SECOND VOYAGE TO EUROPE

Of Irving's life in America between 1806 and 1815 little mention is necessary, as it falls without the scope of this thesis. Yet some mention must be made of it, for the interval had seen the inception of his first literary efforts. When he sailed for Europe in 1815, he had already written the "Salmagundi Papers" and the "History of New York". This latter work had received European notice and approval. Walter Scott was delighted with it. In its trenchant humor and penetrating characterization he saw a close resemblance to the work of Dean Swift and Laurence Sterne.Nothing like it had ever before appeared in American letters. But these works were purely American in spirit and concept. Neither showed any foreign influence.

1

Washington Irving's attitude toward literature as a profession, previous to his second trip abroad, is clearly stated 2 by Charles Dudley Warner: "Up to the time Irving went abroad for the second time, his chief ambition seemed to be to shine as a man of society, and he had the appearance of valuing his achievements with the pen only as a means of social distinction."

Charles Dudley Warner, Studies of Irving, Vol.1,p.25.
Ibid. p. 21.

-6-

an impliant contains of a lotor implied for the continuition in a second state of the second state of the

12906WEDDY ICATOV CHODGE

and and invincia line and interior interior in the sol land the aint in acoust all indicts aller it as , consupped al politice treater for and constant budt is ande of it. for the shines bad sean the incontion of his Tiret literary ertract. in charge in 1815. Is had almost white bad at anothe the "Balanta at then ston "inter " stor well to grotell" out Bet "eronal received European motice and approvel. Walter Coott was do-Lighted with it. In its transministrationers and penetheting offeres -de contas seve Les di pall sutification estate sotores but in a -inamit "lever mer office and this there works were number of out to spirit malers' appears. Solther blowed any foreign this defined - out of a set in the 's the base toward it to be and a set of the base of the rethes villents at the arts bacase the of audivors, the bland y adden for the second time, bis onis' andivious coened to be to shine as a sen of society, and he had the oppendides of veluing bies ". disputtels isloub le enter a an glas and alt date discoverings

. Ohnelse hudles Ternde, Studies of IF 116. Vel.1. p. 35.

Consideration of Irving's early ill health and understanding of the lack of financial incentive does much to explain this attitude. Life thus far had dealt gently with him and his attitude toward it was precisely like that of many another similarly placed. The sudden withdrawal of an apparently assured income and the imperative need of funds for daily existence were met with a patience and courage wholly admirable, as his whole future life testified.

Irving set sail for Europe "to spread his sails wherever any vagrant breeze might carry him." This holiday mood was destined to last but briefly. Upon arrival at Liverpool he found his brother Peter, who presided over the English branch of the family mercantile house, indisposed. The war between England and America had forced a suspension of commerce for a time, and now Irving found his brother incapable of business management. He at once dismissed all holiday plans and took immediate charge of the situation. Until the beginning of 1818 he was burdened with unaccustomed business cares. At the end of this period, the brothers decided to take advantage of the Bankrupt Act and to declare the business insolvent. An occasional ramble through England, Scotland, or Wales was his only escape from depressing cares. With the failure of the family business Irving now found it necessary to turn in all seriousness to his pen.

During his three years' stay in England Irving had found time to make a few literary contacts which were to prove of

-7-

inelicentian of leving's series 111 health and addered aning of the lock of time solid incentive does much to explicit this attitude. Airs sind for had dealt public with his mi his attitude toward is he precisely like that of any another similarly placed. The sudden site fracts of an approntly acsured income and the inconstitue need of finds for dealt shire tence were set with a patience and courses wholly administed.

Aviat are at its carry his. "It's Method are a privation of the second of the second of the second of the second of the transformer of the second of the transformer of the second of the transformer determ, were rearry to a visco field of the second of the family decrembiles house, lightlaponed. She was between or the second of the family decrembiles house, lightlaponed. She was between or the second of the family decrembiles house, lightlaponed. She was between or the second of the family decrembiles house, lightlaponed. She was between or the second of the family decrembiles house, lightlaponed. She was between or the second of the family decrembiles of the second of the second

During his since rears' that in English Irving had found

-

the greatest value to him. He had met Murray and Constable, both important London publishers. He had formed a delightful friendship with the poet Campbell. While on a tour of Scotland, he had met Jeffrey, the publisher of the famed "Edinburgh Review", who had received him with cordiality and had asked him to contribute to his periodical.

Washington Irving's visit to Walter Scott at Abbotsford stimulated him to still greater interest in a literary career. Moreover, it was the good offices of Scott which secured for him a publisher of repute and financial standing in England. Irving's meeting with Scott affected his life so profoundly that it seems worth recording his personal impressions of the man and the event. "On Saturday morning early I took chaise for Melrose, and on the way stopped at the gate of Abbotsford. The glorious minstrel himself came limping to the gate, took me by the hand in a way that made me feel as if we were old friends. I cannot tell you how truly I have enjoyed the hours I have passed with him. They fly by too quick, yet each is loaded with story, incident, or song; and when I consider the world of ideas, images and impressions that have crowded upon my mind since I have been here, it seems incredible that I should have been two days at Abbotsford."

That Scott was equally delighted with his new friend Irving is apparent from a letter which he wrote to his friend John 1. Pierre M. Irving, Life and Letters of Washington Irving, V.1.p.379. 2. Ibid. p. 381.

-8-

1

2

the prestort velue to this. In had not known and Constable, noth hanorbork London willingers. He had d'aread a delightful suismobile with the post Samphall. This on a tun of Spotiant, be had not followy, the publisher of the famed "simburgh hewies", who had received his with not disting and bad second his to considents in periodel.

Makington Irvin's visit to Maker South at Mobifich etimulated him to still greater interation a literary apport. Astropate, it was the acod affices of Molt which events if and a publisher of Member on (Inscold as life of Molent Trvine's appling with South affected his life of Molent that it sears worth recorder als researed interactions of the him are the event. In definite in science into the to are not the event. In definite in the rel of the setue in a site of an instruction of the rel of the setue in a structure matter is and the rel of the setue in a structure matter is and the setue in the setue in a structure of the set affects of the rel of the setue in a structure of the set and the set of the setue in a structure of the set in the set of the setue in a set of the set in the set of a set of the set of the

pause dith min. "her firely bon quist, so sean is lowed alth abort, incluent, on song; and her f consider the Forle of iden issees and inferi the that have broaded abort of alth almos T have loss here, it sears incredible that I should have been the issee it holoseford."

Ling in enoment iron a litter align is urges to its friend in-1. Storre is revine. Life and Terrine of addination irvital. . . 2. Ibia. 5. 381. Richardson, dated Sept. 22, 1817: "When you see Tom Campbell, tell him, with my best love, that I have to thank him for making me known to Mr. Washington, who is one of the best and pleasantest acquaintances I have made this many a day."

THE SKETCH BOOK

Under date of March 3, 1819, Washington Irving wrote from London to his brother Ebenezar in New York, transmitting with this letter the manuscript of "The Sketch Book of Geoffrey Crayon, Gent.", which he desired to be published first in America. His own words reveal the source of his literary inspiration. 1 "I have been for some time nursing my mind up for literary operations, and collecting materials for the purpose. I shall be able, I trust, now to produce articles from time to time that will be sufficient for my present support, and form a stock of copyright property, that may be a little capital for me hereafter. To carry this into better effect it is important for me to remain a little longer in Europe, where there is so much food for observation, and objects of taste on which to meditate and improve.

THE BOAR'S HEAD TAVERN, EASTCHEAP

In his praiseworthy effort to revive the ancient amity between the two great English-speaking peoples of the world, Irving naturally turned to those great Englishmen whose genius 1. Pierre M. Irving, Life and Letters of Washington Irving, Vol.1, p. 387.

-9-

Atomarcana, Antel Sept. 22, 1917; "Mons of as the fauchelt, tell the, which my beick Tays, 1917; "Mons of the Core of fauchelt, ing me thrown to in. another for, who is not by the book and placements of acquintances I have note tole may a lay."

William and a reading to be

ROCH HOTEN IN

Index table of model 3, 1919, "additation in index works" from loaded to his hypother memorer is of "The encient ands of nonitresite that the tables the manageries of "The encient ands of nonitrethere, has parameteries of the nullished first in an etor. The parameteries the encies of the literary induces of these hore the marshes mereter of the literary induces when a constrained respect to the first induces in the stars, and collecting as set in the first we have be when a distance at the marshes of the margares. I want he are in a market in the first here is the margares. I want he are in a distance the marshes market, and faits the stars, if any that here is present included from these to the base there. In any the table derives a faits to colored for a after. In any the table derives as his is colored for a start, in an although the first of the is intervention in the market is table derives at his is colored for a start. In any this is table derives at the is intervention in the is and the derives in the start of the intervention in the is a start in the start of the start of the intervention is the intervention, and of technology is here the intervention intervention.

THE PARTS AREA THAN ANY CAMPAGE THE

In his prolowworkby effort to regive the Anti-ut anty he tween the two great English-organizing popules of the monita, irits - maximally turned to those great Englishes whose ganing b. Fidwer M. Trwing, Life and Letters of Tagaington from , Jol.

~ e

had become an acknowledged tradition and a mutual bond. Turning the pages of Shakespeare's "Henry Fourth" and happening upon the scenes of "madcap revelry" at the old Boar's Head Tavern, a visit to the place suggested itself. Arrived at Eastcheap, famous for its cookery and its conviviality, he found the only relic of the ancient inn to be a boar's head, carved in stone, and fixed in the wall of an old house which stood upon the site of Dame Quickly's whilom abode. Referred for historical detail to a tallow-chandler's widow nearby, it developed that the old tavern had been destroyed by fire in the great London conflagration, that it had been rebuilt and used as a tavern until a dying landlord, in a religious moment, had bequeathed it to St. Michael's Church. Later still, the commercial demands of the neighborhood had caused it to be converted into shops. There was, however, a picture of the Boar's Head to be seen at St. Michael's.

Irving, in his ramblings through the little alleys and dark passageways of this historic old neighborhood, never did discover the picture of which he was in search. But he did contrive to present to his readers the spirit of Old England as exemplified in some of her more humble subjects. He shows us the sexton of St. Michael's, a humble, scraping little man, exchanging philosophical observations over a pint of ale with the organist of the church. The old man is a mine of local tradition. He points out the grave of Robert Preston, once the drawer of the Boar's Head, and relates how, on a dark winter's

-10-

ind means an action terms of the bold and a match bond in the a inguine more of distributions of them of with and distribuward the acterns of "match, wards" of the bit don's hout there, a timit is bits discontant it is in the bit don's hout attars, function for the content and the community, is found the contraction of the accient of the community, is found the contraction of the accient of the community, is found the state, and these bits will of an old house which about allots the is of the action is the state acted at the states and the old the action of the state acted the state, and the distribution is the state acted at a states and the state of the will of an old house which about allots the is of the state of the state of the state acted the state and the state is the state of the state acted the state and the state of the state of the state acted the state and the state of the state of the state acted the state of the state action, the term of the state will, the onthe state acted is the state of the state will, the state actes date is the state acted is the state will, the onthe state acted is the state acted is the state will, the state actes date actes of the state acted is the state of the state. The state of the state will be a state of the state of the state of the state will be a state of the state of the state.

- -

Trate, i the reading themes to little the set of the se

night, awakened by the cry of "Waiter" from the tavern nearby, the drawer had appeared in the midst of a jolly clerical group, bearing sundry mugs of foaming ale, to the consternation of all beholders.

On the pretext of showing us the old silverware used at the services of St. Michael's, Irving takes us to The Mason's Arms, a typical little inn of this humble neighborhood. He delights in showing us the simple charm of its well-kept interior. At one end of the room is a coal fire, before which a breast of lamb is roasting. Brass candlesticks and pewter plates and mugs line the mantle-piece. Individual boxes, furnished with a plain deal table and an imaculate table-cloth, give an air of cosy intimacy. The guests are solid, respected business men, the very sort, remarks Irving, which have given England her reputation for punctual honesty and sober propriety.

The landlady is most obliging. She offers for his admiration a japanned iron tobacco-box, of gigantic size, which, she explains, was used by the vestry of St. Michael's at its stated meetings. A silver goblet, the gift of one Francis Wythers, Knight, to the vestry, is next offered for inspection. It is a masterful example of craftsmanship, to be sure, but it suggests the natural inference that the vestry of St. Michaels had, it appears, its worldly side.

Incidents trivial in themselves Irving turns always to good account. His sympathetic imagination clothes them with a charm and a significance which would never occur to the pro-

-11-

ni int, as ound by the dry of ""sites" is a indictory of the term office, the draver had appeared in the midst of a joily clerical group maning bunder such of for the side, to the constaination of the resolution.

Mucho modent of shoing up the oil vilververe up a sign and at the second of the second

reactables for jumphent incasty and sober rearries; The landley is note of lights, his offers for an alal, the isomed iron tobarco-box, of directic alls, in explaint, we used if the veries of it. Although is and stated mething, a liver color, the gift of one function if he a meters of he vector, is rat offered for indeeds if he a meters is a state to the origine and its success the astrict inference and the second of all of all all is a second of the verify of a state of a state if he a meters is a state of a state of the second of a state is the second of a state of a state of a state of a state is a state of a state is the second of a state is the second of a state is a state of a state is a state of a state is a state of a state is a state of a state is a state of a sta

Analdanta istrial in tempetres irring tompe ale is to good socothic lits area thatis inecination clother then with a share and a lightfound which rould nevel occur to the ro-

saic. His quick eye discerns the quaint and the ludicrous, but his humor is never tainted by the scorn of littler minds and he always finds in the most humble being some quality which deserves our respect and attention.

THE BROKEN HEART

"The Broken Heart" is a romantic sketch based upon the tragedy of a lovely Irish lady, whose husband was undeservedly executed for treason by the English. The courageous demeanor of this young man aroused great public sympathy at the time, which was enhanced by the inconsolable grief of the widow, who shortly followed him to the grave. Irving used this incident to illustrate the difference between what he conceived to be the love of woman and the love of man. The conventions of the nineteenth century placed women at a great disadvantage. Her one opportunity for self-expression, reasoned Irving, was a happy marriage. Denied this, life itself became intolerable. Marriage, to a man, did not require this complete absorbtion, for it was only a part of his existence. Business, social life, travel, a variety of outside interests, demanded his attention. Thwarted in love, man could turn to them for relief. But woman, denied these avenues of escape from herself, usually withered and died.

To a modern reader of this essay its theme may make little appeal. He may decry it as sentimentality and wonder at the simplicity of an age that could enjoy such an appeal to romantic idealism. But romantic idealism was the keynote of the age.

-12-

solo, als quick ere sicceres the quaint and the lucionsee. it when it have talked by the serve of littler shine and hearings fields in the sout inches of the sous quality when is another our respect an attention.

TRASS NEADES. ENT

ship outs with the purpose of the there are the bis of an attack rate estimated by the incomedial and arts of the wider. On sairth religion to the grows. Invine used this individually all of the behavior the second of the second second of the second second it is a second it toy for sed -- axer and on, researed Invite, who a happy instruction the sector line is a state in the table tribeles and the set of the sector a ride the ist activities aberries and allow the the part of his antabarder. Suchace, coold life, trevel, a variety of putatie interess, then was the stimuton. Thranted in lave, wer conta nutra to thes for relation and where the . Seit ins Synedity within a tiesand sert equery is assessed

-120

Chivalry toward women was the groundwork of every young gentleman's education. Who can deny that much of the graciousness and charm of life disappeared with the so-called emancipation of women?

This sketch was greatly admired by the aristocratic readers of the day. Irving was thought to have attained the ultimate in natural and sweet pathos. The author's inborn qualities of gentleness and refinement revealed themselves in the sincerity and charm of "The Broken Heart". As a matter of fact, he wrote from the heart, for he had early lost, through death, his betrothed, Matilda Hoffman. Every intimate of Washington Irving knew the devotion with which he cherished her memory, which was a deep, though concealed, influence in his life to the day of his death.

ENGLISH WRITERS ON AMERICA

In this sketch Irving deals plainly with the hostility manifested between literary men of England and the United States. The English traveller, he maintained, displays the best and the worst traits of the English nation. He is shrewd and penetrating in his observations and estimates of foreign nations and is likewise fair, provided no element of rivalry enter into the situation. But if the reputation of his country is at stake, the Englishman is boastful and unfair to a degree.

Irving attempts to make this criticism less galling by remarking that the United States has been unfortunate in the

-13-

Univelry toward wegen, was the groundwork of avery young custleman's aducation. Who can Newy that much of the graciousna and enarm of life diampeared with the he-culled emanchmation of whoman?

This should not proubly stated by the aristocratic realere of the det. Irvin who there it has a "link who hithus in network and proce wellos. The sature is in an qualities of scatteness on its issuent to thid banks det is any alignities of and duarm of "the Proken Healt". As a matter of fast, he wrote troubhe heath, for he had saily lost, noroshi death, he wrote ore had, sottide for he had saily lost, noroshi death, he wrote the to death, statide of leading of the second of an and death, statide for he had saily lost, and the second, he wrote and the heath, for he had saily lost, noroshi death, his debreak the develor site which he encideded of leading of the death, the index of a state of leading of a deep, though concealed, influence in his life to the day of the death.

AUTRICANNO BREETEN ERICAN

In this states invite danie danie disting with the heatility contrested between literary new of England and the inited this ine include traveller, he deintained, displays the best and the moret traits of the English nation. We is choosed and constructing in his observations and estimates of foreign pathaw and is liketize fair, provided is clement of rively substate the signation. But if the remitation of his contry is at ester.

requiring that the United States had been unfortunite in the

- 25-

type of Englishman visiting her shores. The travelling salesman, the broken-down mechanic, the unscrupulous adventurer, could not be expected, he declares, to report with intelligence or sympathy the social or intellectual qualities of a nation. English people have been too ready to accept scurrilous comment about the United States from people whom they would have refused to receive in their homes.

Elements of the American population are, it is true, cheap and vulgar. But education and refinement are constantly, though unobtrusively, working to correct these faults, which the superficial English observer entirely overlooked. The traveller may miss some of the comforts and amenities to which he is accustomed at home, yet he often fails to realize that these superficial discomforts are more than counterbalanced by vastly greater social and political freedom than that to which he is accustomed at home.

English travellers, too, have often misunderstood the lack of social distinctions in America. They have accepted friendliness and democratic informality as an acknowledgement of personal superiority and have requited it with scorn, though these very people would not have received, by virtue of their station, the same courtesy and consideration in England.

But why take to heart so keenly the aspersions of England? It is, after all, world opinion that counts. But the influence 1. Washington Irving, The Sketch Book, p.97.

2. Ibid. Vol.2, p.99.

-14-

1

2

the brain a low best and the best and the the black of the state of the state of the brain the backet of the unsertial of the brain the deviation of the state of the back of the state of the back of the bac

Markada of the American contraction and, it is true, or and and multiple. Wit advoction and relincent are canetantly, trouch unobtraisoly, sortiate to corruct these faults, which win sumerfloted sailed observarients of corruct the travellar wi also have of the optimies and sai fights to which he is servetors also have, not be often radie to realize that there do periods floted and which i freedom that to realize that there do periods decide and which i freedom that to realize that the servetors about and which i freedom that the to which to which are the social and which i freedom that the to which to which are the social and which i freedom that the server of a first start at your.

Anglian travellers, too, neve at ben alsourcervised the ise of Social distinctions in America. They have accounce friendlit. soos and democratic information to an estimated from being of person accordants and have requised it with score, france of summer as all the neorie would add the securitor, of white of Summer as all the same countres and count densition in Ingland.

2. Told. Vol. 8, D. 92.

-11-

of the written word in the United States is little realized in England. The American is an omniverous reader. Universal education and a popular press give wide circulation to every slander of an English statesman, every calumny from the pen of an English writer. It should be the duty of literature to create, not to destroy, good feeling between the nations.

1

2

3

-15-

Irving denies the English impression that Americans are hostile to the mother country. They resent, it is true, the illiberality of English writers and politicians, but they retain the memory of English inheritence and associations and secretly long for the good opinion of England. He warns American writers not to imitate the slanderous attacks of English authors and journalists. These replies, he makes clear, would never be published in England and would therefore fail of their object. Further, Americans will retain a far higher standard of self-respect and effectiveness if they ignore hostile English comment altogether.

Irving makes the further point that a new and developing country like the United States should not be blinded by the prejudices of the Old World, but should strike out for herself along new paths. There is much, he insists, to admire in the English character. The spirit of her constitution is the spirit of our own. English morality, intellectual independence, points 1. Washington Irving, The Sketch Book, p. lol. 2. Ibid. p. 104.

3. Ibid. p. 105.

An all and the sconican is an contraction to litely restore in Socient, he sconican is an contracte reader, universal etc. cation and a normlish press size wide, wire distributed as every cish com at a normlish press. , every solution from the press of an complete matter, (to blanded be che which of litely some to even e, por to destroy, contraction reteed the nations.

in the state the further point that a new ad Herolobing events; if is the fulled is the should man be bithed by the graduities of the Cli could, but about a series and the borealt along new prime. There is ratch, he instate, to somive in the wheiles character. The solute of for charitales, to somive in the shelles character. The solute of for charitales is a solute in the limit of the bound is intellected of the charitales is to the limit of the bound is a solute of the charitales is to the limit of the the solute of for charitales is a solute in the limit of the solution of the solution of the is to bind of the limit of the solution of the is tobat, b. 104.

· 201 .0 .5101 .

of view, have much in common with those of our own country. Let us not imitate England merely because it is England, but discriminate between her good qualities and her bad.

JOHN BULL

In his sketch entitled "John Bull" Irving continues his interpretation of English life and character. He observes that the name and symbol which the English have chosen to express their nationality is a typical expression of British humor. Far from selecting something grandiose and imposing, John Bull is a sturdy, corpulent old fellow with a stolid, florid face, red waistcoat, leather breeches and an oaken cudgel. He is, of course, a selfimposed caricature, but he does express the bluff, hearty English temperament to an extraordinary degree. But the old fellow is thoroughly insular, and proud of it. Irving suggests that perhaps his implied character has led the more ignorant part of the English population to place too high a valuation upon its fancied freedom from foreign fripperies, to the unnecessary exclusion of a broader national culture.

With his customary genial understanding, the author dwells upon the solid qualities of the English temperament. To Irving, the true Englishman is "jolly rather than gay; melancholy rather than morose; is easily moved to a sudden tear, or surprised into a broad laugh. But he loathes sentiment and has no turn for light 1. Washington Irving, The Sketch Book, p. 336. 1

2

2. Ibid. p. 338.

-16-

of view, have much in someon with those of our ave country. Let b

IST F MACT

In Mis exected erticles "form fell" over a filter of the starter has a erter allow of english life and altonester. We block in the has and ernol which the anglish hav ones to correct to the mationality is a truiced error sales of driftich humor. For from the block of the loss starter alton of driftich humor. For from the block of the loss starter alton, or or weath will be a start transformer to a truice and an action of the bo, or owners, is and the same the starter alton at the does and the bo, or owners, is and the same the starter and an action of the bo, or owners, is and the same the starter of the bose address the full, he way and the transformer to an article and the bose address in the bose of the the transformer to an article of the same is some the off the the transformer to an action of the to. Invite the off the the the same the starter and the bose address into the off the the the same transformer to be the same is some the the the the transformer to a starter be the same is some the the the the transformer to a starter be the same is some the the the the transformer to be the starter be the same is some the the the the transformer to be the starter before and the the the the the the transformer to be the starter between the the the the the transformer to be the starter between the the the the the transformer to be the to be the same is some the the the the the transformer to be the to be the to be the the the the the the the transformer to be the transformer to be the transformer to be the tobs to be the tobs to be the to be the to be the tobs t

· · · · ·

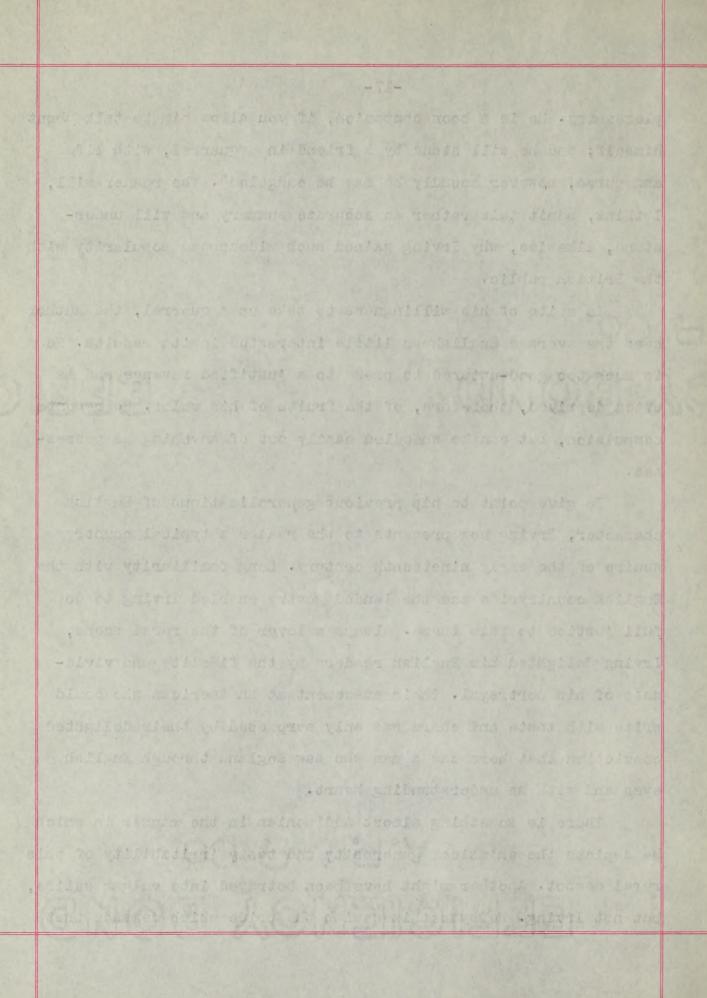
pleasantry. He is a boon companion, if you allow him to talk about himself; and he will stand by a friend in a quarrel, with life and purse, however soundly he may be cudgeled". The reader will, I think, admit this rather an accurate summary and will understand, likewise, why Irving gained such widespread popularity with the British public.

In spite of his willingness to take up a quarrel, the author sees the average Englishman little interested in its results. He is much too good-natured to press to a justified revenge and is often deprived, therefore, of the fruits of his valor. He resents compulsion, but can be wheedled easily out of anything he possesses.

To give point to his previous generalizations of English character, Irving now presents to the reader a typical country squire of the early nineteenth century. Long familiarity with the English countryside and the landed gentry enabled Irving to do full justice to this theme. Always a lover of the rural scene, Irving delighted his English readers by the fidelity and vividness of his portrayal. Their amazement at an American who could write with taste and charm was only surpassed by their delighted conviction that here was a man who saw England through English eyes and with an understanding heart.

There is something almost Addisonian in the manner in which he depicts the whimsical generosity and testy irritability of this rural despot. Another might have been betrayed into vulgar satire, but not Irving. He sympathizes with the pride which demands that

-17-



the old manor house, a rambling conglomoration of varying architectural epochs, be maintained with a degree of pretention, in spite of varying demands upon a diminishing income. If the faded glories of the banqueting hall and the tarnished splendor of the deserted suites are eloquent of departed grandeur, they are still symbolical of family pride and national glory, upon which every Englishman prided himself, as Irving well knew. If his retinue of servants and dependents is beyond all bounds of economic prudence, is not this an exemplification of typical English bounty?

1

Mindful of the altered viewpoint of the rising generation, Irving represents the children as opposed to the sacrifices of the old squire. Unimpressed by ancient family glory, they demand retrenchment and a closer alignment of income with expenditure. But the tactless attitude of a younger son, who prefers the tavern and its society to family festivity, arouses the old man to rebellion. Once again, family pride becomes the issue and parental authority asserts itself.

Irving philospohizes upon the effect of this struggle for appearances upon the older generation, as symbolized by the old squire. John Bull is no longer the bluff, hearty old fellow of better times. His shrunken body and waspish disposition attest the bitterness of family strife. Critical dependents, while they accept the squire's assistance, privately assert that the old gentry is bordering upon decay. Yet Irving eulogizes the old

1. Washington Irving, The Sketch Book, p. 341.

-18-

the ald untir house, a remained atta a hear of product of verying atomteother outsite, to maintained atta a hear of product of the saids of the benerots upon a diminicitie interpoint of a secstands of the beneroting and and the two and a gologon of the reserved mittes are of a self briderarie of their, the secatil sympolical of facily wills and national flore, upon which every faction point of a self wills and national flore, upon which retine of service and dependence is repair of the of a service of service and dependence is repair of the secontest produce, is but this as are not to secontest produce, is but this as are not to be a secontest of the service of the second onte is repair of the secontest of the service of the second onte is repair of the secontest of the service of the second onte is repair of the secontest of the service of the second onte is repair of the secon-

Luich of the altered viewpoint of the riche deneration irving represents the children as opened to the satriftees of the pld scribes. This present of unstead femily flory, the feand retreaches the schoor righteet if there with expenditure. But the testiese attitude of a vounger son, and unstead the taver and its society to featly restivity, croase who he alt and to rebailion. The again, faddy inite boosted the the alth and parameter to heavier there.

Inving philashouldes once the offect of bhir struggle for appearences upon the plder seneration, as each lized by the clo surre. Join Bull is no langer the bluff, hearly bir feller of better times. The director book our mandah dispus/tion attent the pltterrass of f mily strife. Critical dependents, while the accept the setting's sectators, privately matrices the bla pertury is bardening upon does, which the bla

1. Manilagton Irving, Te sketcheBoot, p. 141.

national ideals. If extravagance is present, it is in reality the fault of generosity. If the old squire is quarrelsome, it proves his native courage and independence. The oak has a rough exterior, but it is sound and sturdy at heart, and so, declares Irving, is the English character as exemplified by the landed gentry.

THE MUTABILITY OF LITERATURE

In the delightful little sketch on "The Mutability of Literature" Irving writes subjectively of his literary convictions. In his usual whimsical manner, he introduces the subject in the form of a conversation between a parchment-bound quarto, which he has taken from the library in Westminster Abbey and which miraculously acquires the power of speech, and himself. The little quarto has a distinct grievance. He objects volubly to being kept incommunicado with thousands of other volumes upon a dusty shelf. The Dean, at least, might visit them occasionally, as a mark of respect and friendship. Books, he declares, were written to give pleasure and instruction to human beings. Why not give them a chance to do it?

Irving endeavors to reassure and comfort him. It is the fate of books to be forgotten and in this respect the little quarto is not a whit worse off than most of his contemporaries. He cites Giraldus Cambrensis, the historian, antiquary, philosopher, theologian, and poet. This estimable gentleman gave up

-19-

Analysis limit. If orthousing the in present, it is in the second of the fault of senerocity. If she did a line is controlecon, it proves his parive obtained and incorportance. The set has a control esterior, built is summary an empirical control double inter, is the intervalor as exceptified of the load interval

NEW ATTLE OF MELITELYUS SHT

In the delighted liters whether on the liters of delitions and spectro derives and estration of his liters of delitions. In the neuron deliver of these a directions from anothed in the form of entropential delivery is Restaurated from another and which is his three from the liters in Restaurater there and which directions, acquires the present three is object wold an liter of marks have a listing of the object wold and directly start the liters of the object wold and directly start the liters of the second of the baself. The directly start the liters of the object wold and which and y start to the second of the second of the baself. The during start to the second of the second of the baself. The during start to the second with the second of the baseling of and the second of the second of the baseling of the baseling of and the second of the second of the baseling of the baseling of and the second of the second of the baseling of the baseling of and the second of the baseling of the baseling of the baseling of and the second of the baseling of the baseling of the baseling of and the second of the baseling of the baseling of the baseling of and the second of the baseling of the baseling of the baseling of and the second of the baseling of the baseling of the baseling of and the baseling of the baseling of the baseling of the baseling of and the base of the baseling of and the baseling of the baseling

frying andersons to reaccure and edulies its is the rate of bong to be forgetten of in this respect the little meets is not a whit where oil has nost of his contemporarile. To alles firsting Generante, the forcetor, whiteen, philonbran, throitstan, and cost. This entireshe cattles a tayo he two bishoprics to devote himself entirely to writing, with what result? Few have even become aware of his existence. But the little quarto is far from pacified. He is notable, he declares, for the purity of his native English, at a time when the language had scarcely become fixed.

1.

2.

3

Irving takes occasion to reveal the absurdity of the idea that Spencer's poetry sprang from a "well of pure English undefiled." On the contrary, Irving insists, the English language may be likened to a muddy brook, constantly subject to defilement and change. It is, consequently, the fate of the author to find his thought muddied and obscure to later generations, which refuse to take the necessary pains to understand, but turn instead to modern authors more easy of comprehension.

This constant alteration of language and the consequent obscurity of ancient authors is, Irving reasons, perhaps a desirable condition after all. If the vegetable kingdom produced imperishable products, nature would over-run the earth. Similarly, if the products of the pen were never to be forgotten, the intellectual market would be glutted and new creative genius would receive no stimulus. It appears to me that Irving has not selected a very happy analogy. Perfect specimens of the vegetable world have never been produced in over-abundance, nor have the masterpieces of literature been so numerous as to lower

Washington Irving, The Sketch Book, p. 168.
Ibid. p. 170.

3. Ibid. p. 172.

-20-

And he houses to devote Lignell' antirely to writing, Alth whit rue lithings have by a bouge swell if his statione. At the Little reachs is fur from bouge swell if his statione. At elittle for the furth, if his stilled. A faile house the lithes had so loser secon fired.

discurding of doublent cubbors is. Irone reacons, herhers a desirbits condition after 211. If the repressive himdon inoquest interimbeds products, require a different to represe and interimbeds products, require a different to represe the interimbed a remets of the require here to represe the interimbed a stimute would be shifted and new pressive refause and interestive be stimute. In service to represe to renot devected a versition will be and on a formation as and an a different beauty. In service to renot devected a versition of the rest of a service of the shifted and new pressive refause and devected a stimute. In service to renot devected a versitient in the service in a strength and devected a versitient in the service in a strength and devected a strength in the service in a strength and an a different service of the stifted and difference of the service in the service of the stifted and difference of the service in a different service of the stifted and difference of the service in a stifted and the stifted and difference of the service of the stifted and difference of the stifted and associated a stifted of the stifted and difference of the service of the stifted of the stifted and difference of the service of the stifted of the stifted and difference of the stifted and associated as stifted and the stifted and difference of the stifted and the stifted of the stifted of the stifted and difference of the stifted and the stifted of the stifted of

1. Wantient Irving, the States Sook, realds.

the prestige of letters.

Our author considers it somewhat providential that the mechanical limits of book-production in the early days of the world placed a decided limit upon the intellectual output. Had it been otherwise, he admits the fear of a literary inundation. Now that the free use of paper and the press have removed that desirable restraint, Irving deplores the flood of publications and the unrestrained competition of authorship. There is something recognizably modern in this heartfelt outburst. Every generation is conscientiously warned of just this danger, never so great as to-day, yet the doleful prophecies never seem to be realized. Criticism, Irving thinks, may prove to be of some help in winnowing the literary wheat from the chaff. The critics, therefore, are entitled to their place in the sun, be they good or bad. Many a man of the period, he admits, may be tolerably well-informed, though he read little else than the reviews of the day. It is interesting to recall that our author, when offered a post on one of these same literary publications, declined the honor with the remark that he had no taste for controversy, literary or political. It is interesting to note, also, that he has little respect for the claims of the various commentators whose varying interpretations, he feels, merely cloud the beauty and significance of even Shakespeare himself.

1

2

-21-

The little folio shakes his parchment sides at the thought that a mere deer-stealer has succeeded in defying the 1. Washington Irving, The Sketch Book, p. 173.

Ibid. p. 174.

the prestize of I there.

we ob an to all the of had - profinetion in the endy days of the batt . Jugito faudo Ffeir: unon the nort Simte Declero a Decela Statt it been athorning, in adolts the cont of a literary involation. quelight restinged. Iraing Scalones bis first of Australians -and al event ... There's the in institute is antitute . There's is some where . tanned by the inert built at matter thesteroout putit as anot no to-day, got the televisi promoted as aver aces to be realised. Crisicius, Laving Cinner, asy grove to be of got videraldt an unt the stint, is admits, the solution that the tolerably tion . It is internation to legal think but and an at .

and the second

tilled the term with the remark that he had no terts for controvery, literary or political. It is in interpoling to note, also, that he has little rempret for the stain of the values corrections whose variant interpretations, he facts, servic sladt the boaute with flavitions of even thereopeade Hasself. The little faile share of even thereopeade Hasself. the little faile share of all store the freehend to the thought the nore fear-about fins bloceopea in frains the little store, the same least the source so is a store the factors are the little store of the source of the source of the factors are the little store of the source factor of the source of the source of the little store of the source of the source of the factors are the little source of the source of the source of the source of the little the little source of the source of the source of the source of the little source of the source ravages of literary oblivion. But Irving rallies to the defense of the playwright and poet. If any writer shall survive, he maintains, it will be Shakespeare. Viewpoints change with the ages, but the poet makes his appeal to the heart, which is eternal and unalterable. The reader may seek escape from the bog of theological speculation or the dreary waste of metaphysics. But the poet touches nature with beauty. He is the master interpreter of what is most striking in nature and art. If beauty of language can ever retain its charm for succeeding generations, the apt phrase and lovely imagery of the poet is most likely to survive.

The untimely appearance of the old verger interrupted this lively exchange of views. The parchment-bound folio, with its little brass clasps, relapsed into silence. But we have profited by this delightful glimpse into an author's mind. He has granted us a few rare moments of intimacy and has emerged from behind the formalism of the day long enough for us to gain something of an insight into his literary convictions.

THE STAGE COACH

Irving knew that, if you would know a nation, you must not only live with it, but you must also travel with it. The stage coach could have been no new creation to this experienced traveller. But the observant eye, ever searching for the picturesque, and the sympathetic mind, ever seeking out the common touch of humankind, could ignore neither the English coach nor the English coachman. Here was an opportunity, too, to present

-22-

revenue of itherics oblivion, and inving whiles on his antenne of the elementations of orst. If any inition shall movine, he maintains, at alls or heatenings. Clearalines another which a sent of and analysis and the algorithm the transmit, which is about the and and analysis and the algorithm the transmit, which is about the analysis the second bie algorithm the transmitter is a shall be an and and analysis and the algorithm the of an asymptote in the algorithm the first react the analysis of an asymptote. And is a part to any intervals. The reacter can also all of the intervalse. And is a part to any intervals. The reacter can also all of the intervalse. And all and the intervals. The reacter can also all of the intervalse. And all and the intervals is a start of an and and it. If branch of isan the all of the intervals of the part is and in all of the intervalse. And all all of the intervals of the part is all which is intervalsed thread with the other the algorithm to the all of the intervalsed thread and its intervals of the part is all which is intervalsed if the read all of, relevant of the part is all the start intervalsed if the first definition of intervalses into the all of the intervalsed if the read all of, relevant into the allow into the intervalsed if the intervalse of intervalses into the intervalse into the intervalse of the intervalse of the off into the intervalse of the intervalse of the intervalse of into the intervalse of the all of the intervalse of intervalses into the intervalse of the intervalses of the the intervalse of intervalses into the intervalses of the intervalses into the intervalse of intervalses into the intervalses into the intervalses into the intervalse of into the intervalses into the intervalses of the intervalses of intervalses into the intervalses into the intervalses into its the intervalse of into the intervalses into the intervalses into its the intervalses into the intervalses into

the formation of the law lang a much for us to this something

HONCO MOATE SET

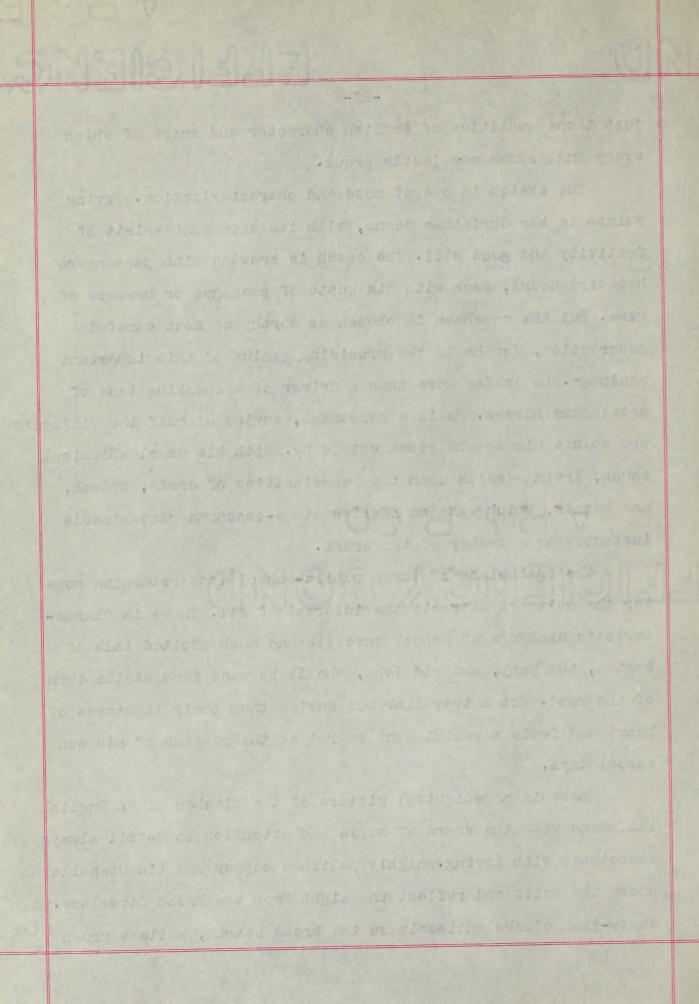
Irving and the two, is you must be a nexton, you must not only live size it. Her you must also translation it. In a see output contribute oben no non-netion to take a serierand browseller. But the overstand ore, ever adsigning for the sheturceque, and the exampletic size and adsigning for the sheturbours of humansing, chill friday sets which also intitud on bours of humansing, chill friday sets as a set of a contain the set of bours of humansing, chill friday sets as a set of the bours of the set of the set of the set of the set of the bours of the set of the set of the set of the set of the bours of the set of the set of the set of the set of the bours of the set of the set of the set of the set of the bours of the set of the set of the set of the set of the bours of the set o just those qualities of English character and scene of which every Englishman was justly proud.

The sketch is one of mood and characterization. Irving paints in the Christmas scene, with its attendant spirit of festivity and good will. The coach is crowded with passengers homeward bound, each with his quota of packages or hampers of game. But the coachman is chosen as worthy of most careful description, for he is the presiding genius of this important equipage. He is far more than a driver of a spanking team of mettlesome horses. He is a personage, envied of half the villagers who salute him as the coach whirls by. With his usual whimsical touch, Irving dwells upon the peculiarities of dress, speech, and manner, which make an English stage-coachman recognizable instantly as a member of the craft.

The enthusiasm of three public-school lads returning home for the holidays attracts the interest of all. There is characteristic exchange of school anecdote and much excited talk of Bantam, the pony, and old John, who is to meet them at the turn of the road. Not a traveller but envies them their lightness of heart and feels a reminiscent regret at the passing of his own school days.

There is a delightful picture of the kitchen of an English inn, done with the charm of style and attention to detail always associated with Irving. Highly polished copper and tin utensils adorn the walls and reflect the light from the broad fireplace. A smoke-jack clanks endlessly on the broad hearth, while a group

-23-



of hungry travellers sit at a well-scoured deal table and consume vast quantities of beef and ale. Village gossips, pipe or tankard in hand, occupy the settle before the fire. Through a half-open door one catches a glimpse of a cosy private room, where the gentlefolk take their ease.

The significance of this sketch lies, not in its importance nor the new light which it throws upon English character or scene, but upon the charm and authenticity of this glimpse of England during the holiday season.

RURAL LIFE IN ENGLAND

One of the most discerning and informative essays in "The Sketch Book" is that entitled "Rural Life in England". To form a correct estimate of English character, Irving insists, it is necessary to study the English people in the country as well as in the metropolis. From the experience of his own Continental travels, he writes that in England all classes of society appreciate life amid rural surroundings, residing in the city only while business requires it, while in France or Germany, for example, wealth and fashion congregate in the large cities, leaving the country to a boorish peasantry.

He points out that a successful London merchant, once he has made his fortune in the City, acquires a suburban retreat where he indulges his passion for an orchard, or a garden. Even the dweller in the poorest sections of London will have his windowsill flowerpot, or his grass plot.

-24-

and year and there it at a mil-societ test tible and dosand year and there it has a mil-societ to the tible and doscannon year and there at the settle before the theo. The tible at -open door one outside a lique of a cong private ruch, who so on laid has their other.

-.....

to significance of this assignified, dot to its important of the box line dial fit enver and anglish devices of and of most bis diary and mathematelty of this file of a fight weing the soliday assuon.

CHALLANS TI STRILLAND

manor the must discurring and informative easier in The manor is the particular formation in Addant". To form an correct assigned of Equiper distances, Train inducts, it is noncaseers to singly the farith rapple in the enderg as and seits as more point of the exact spice of the enderg as and seits as mater to the first start spice of the enderg as and seits as mater to the first start spice of the enderg as and seits as a mater to the first start spice of the enderg as and seits as a first to the enderge of the enderge of the enderge as a set of the first start of the enderge of the enderge of the enderge as a start of the first start of the enderge of the enderge of the enderge as a first of the first start of the enderge of the enderge of the enderge as a start of the first start of the enderge of the enderge of the enderge and the enderge of the first of the first of the enderge of the enderge and the enderge of the first of the first of the enderge of the enderge and the enderge of the first start of the enderge of the first of the enderge of the enderge and the enderge of the first of the first of the enderge of the enderge and the enderge of the first of the first of the enderge of the enderge of the enderge and the enderge of the first of the first of the enderge of the enderge

the particle out that a successful finder workers, once he the rate the fourture in the dist, souther a mutantic retract bers he indulges his passfun for a proband, dr's survent the the sector is passes sections of homen will bare his raid But the Englishman in town is absorbed in his affairs. His naturally genial nature suffers an eclipse and he becomes self-centered and calculating. In the country he throws aside formality and gives free rein to his natural spontaneity. He builds charming country homes, which he fills with every luxury and refinement he can secure. His parks and lawns are worldfamous for their landscaped beauty. He has an instinctive eye for a lovely vista and will take the utmost pains to provide it where possible. Nor is this appreciation of out-door beauty confined to the aristocracy. The simple cottager delights in the velvet green of his little grass plot and spends many hard-won hours in the cultivation of his trim box hedge. Climbing vines turn his cottage into a picturesque bower and reflect the quiet contentment of the laborer within.

With simple directness Irving writes: "I do not know a finer race than the English gentlemen. " He is deeply appreciative of the manly qualities of a class which takes pride in its physical fitness and wholesome simplicity of manner. Nor is this example without effect upon the nation as a whole, for this mutual love of country life serves to bind the lower classes more closely to the upper than in any other country in the world. Irving notes, however, that the larger estates have absorbed many acres formerly owned by the small yeoman, whom poverty has dispossessed.

Love of nature permeates English literature more than that Washington Irving, The Sketch Book, pps. 106,107,110.

-25-

1

2

The contract of the second of

"The state dissolves wing these I is a not have a there race that the first of subleman. " As is desk, and well, the state of the manip to All the state of the blood prine is the constant of the simple and the state of the blood prine is the second of southy life before a simple as the second of the simtal low of southy life before to the second of the state about so the simple is and the state country is the second tribulations, apaged, which has later a state by a second the second of southy owned by the second of the second the state of the second the state of the second of the second of the second of the second the state of the second of the

boys of rabits secondates Frightab Willer there are this the

of any other nation. Chaucer and Shakespeare continually revealed an amazongly comprehensive and accurate knowledge of English flora and fauna. British poets have shown their feeling for nature in some of their most exquisite lines.

To an American, English scenery may appear drawn to rather a small scale. Compared with the grandeur of an American mountain range, or the vastness of its level plains, an English landscape might seem monotonous, were it not for the quiet charm of its cultivated background, where every house is a delight to the eye and every turn of the road presents a miniature landscape of its own.

Irving's love for the peaceful and the venerable is evident in every line of this little sketch, and nothing better illustrates the cosmopolitan viewpoint of the man. Americans of the period affected to admire only the practical and the new, a characteristic which often laid them open to criticism from subjects of old world countries, who could see only the apparent vulgarity of such a viewpoint, failing utterly to realize that it was a natural attitude in a new, rapidly-developing country.

CRITICAL ESTIMATE OF THE SKETCH BOOK

The author of "The Sketch Book" was actuated by a particular purpose in the writing of these informal sketches, a purpose directly traceable to his familiarity with English life and letters. Charles Dudley Warner gives it as his opinion that: "Irving wrote the book with a distinct object. He set out to

-26-

of any oplion matton. On and the loss of a continually never of an encourse contreponetive and accurate acculates of antitude flore and failure. Thitled months have shown order feeling for a cure in some of the instead enquinite line.

a and teast. any any to concern any to the teast to the test a and teast. appres is the transmer of an american countain range, or the tostance of its latel plaine, an inglin landwage state and uphotenade, were it motifor the quiet char of its equitient d boundeaut, were it motifor the quiet char the que and even that of the read presents a distant incer of its ow.

dent in every line of this feaceful and the volphable is orident in every line of this little shoten, and not insphale r threfacts the composition viewpoint of the real meetican the verified affected to adafre only the provided and the new objects of all works complete land one to evolutions from addressed of all works complete, who could use only the realise has pulsagely of and a statement, fulling utberly to realize has but we a maturel stitute in a nut, raiddly-training courts

NOOTHEDIATS THE SC BLARITERIA DITIES

"The subtor of " are shoton host" was actuated by " partioning nurses in this writting of these informal theorem, aurgoes directly transable to his realized in realization of and lateora, durries bruiley farmer stratic is a his spinion and "invite stoke the book the solution object. He shout to change the spirit in which America regarded England". This spirit in England "was misrepresented and misunderstood, and there was a good deal of bad blood that was the result of ignorance and prejudice."

It is typical of the cosmopolitanism so natural to Irving that he should indulge in just such a crusade. He recognized the essential heritage of English custom and language, realized that the more intelligent of his own countrymen tacitly, if not openly, admired much that was fine in the English character. Conversely, he knew that if America and Americans could be more acutely and fairly presented to Englishmen than was customary in English letters, or in the reports of travellers, the better-class Englishman would form a more favorable opinion of this rapidly developing country.

The very fact that an American was proving himself capable of writing with charm and distinction, and was actually making an international reputation for himself in the field of letters, was a matter of never-ending amazement to many an English commentator. England had assumed a virtual dictatorship in English literature, and it was a never-ending source of satisfaction to Irving that he, an American, was compelling English literati to admit him within the pale.

Since "The Sketch Book" was widely read by English and Americans alike, and universally applauded by each, it is evident this bit of literary propaganda was achieving precisely the result intended. But Irving possessed too lofty and sincere a character to be satisfied for a moment with a purely partisan purpose.

-27-

biur ou the solute in stick constan meanied failand". This will' in Sailadd "see mieroprocesses on ulbumeerstood, and brene was a good dealest bad bland that and the moult of lasorance and arejustee.

the state is a foreigned of the experimentation of a property of the transformed the state of th

or writting alth duar that indicate and indicate and indicate another another and at writting alth duarm and listification, and as solysly sating as intermationed reduce to for himself in the field of lettere, and another of news-conting usagement to many on inpited contractor. England has assume a virtual tional orening in inpites if tarature, using it as a comparise source of and faultantic the production of a field of the source of and faultantic the state of a source of a bound of the source of a source of a source of a source of a bound of a source of a bound of a source of a source of a source of a source of a bound of a source of a source of a source of a source of a bound of a source of a source of a source of a source of a bound of a source of a bound of a source of a bound of a source of a bound of a source of a bound of a source of a bound of a source of a so

merte us siles, of university sprinted by Savilab and merte us siles, of university aprinted by each, it is evident one bit of literary proparate and our contraint programy the solbut introde, set Tevin possessed to forty and singers one His genuine love for English character and institutions, while it never induced him to become an Anglophile, did motivate him so completely that his sketches were considered models of fairness and accuracy by the English themselves, while at the same time they presented to Americans an England which had long been clouded by prejudice and ignorance.

I have commented upon certain selections from "The Sketch Book" because I consider them typical of his writings in this work in matter, in mamner, and in purpose. In "The Boar's Head", "John Bull", "Mutability of Literature", "Rural Life in England" and "The Stage Coach", Irving has presented phases and characteristics of life in metropolitan and rural England, as he observed and evaluated them. His comment is illuminating, sympathetic, and characteristically tactful. He emphasizes the best qualities of English nationality, which he knew would appeal to any Anglo-Saxon with an open mind. He often touched upon the influence of tradition upon the English mind and associates it with some historic shrine or treasured observance which he praises as an ennobling influence upon the national consciousness.

The sketch "English Writers" is frankly partisan, but the theme is handled with such tact and restraint that its controversial elements do not rob it of its literary appeal. Long residence in both countries and a sympathetic and intelligent understanding of human types and current opinion in each made it natural for Irving to turn to such a subject. It peculiarly reflects the cosmopolitan spirit of the author's temperament and a far broader

-28-

An genuine leve for Shelles choredter and institution, while it never indeed, is to bedeen an Altionalic, it wothers and as compately the all skildnes were constanted which of Chirness and contract by the Applied themelves, while at his are she that resolute is equiform as applied which had for bon olouged of rejuits and isotute.

The second of the second second structure from " in the second se

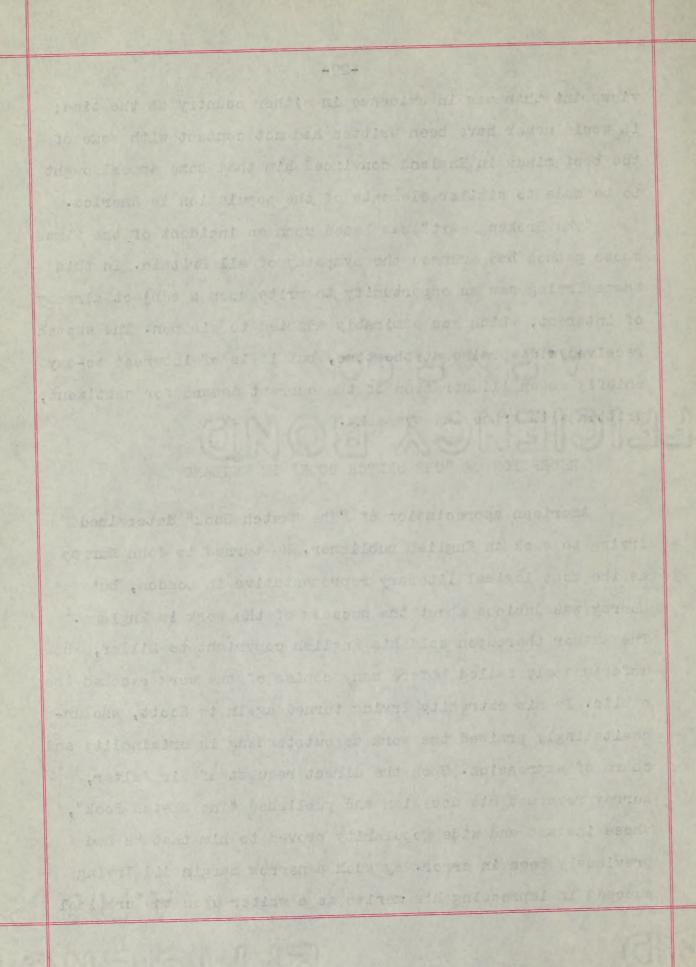
there is hausted the selent filler is heading articles, whe she there is hausted at he selent of the heading for the stratege. wereal alternated at he selent of the there here a post is to detern house in book countries and is balligent where standing of house was outrons contribut in sollingent wood were for inving to the selent outrons contribut in souliarly reflect the countries to the to such arbitrate is poultant, in the ball countries to the selent of the schedel. Is poultant, in the to countries to the selent of the schedel. Is poultant, in the ball countries to the selent of the schedel. Is poultant, in the terminalities opened of the such arbitrate to countries of the ball countries and the selent of the schedel of the schedel of the terminalities opened of the such arbitrate to the sould and the selent to countries to the of the schedel of the schedel of the schedel to be countries to the of the schedel of the schedel of the schedel the schedel of the schedel of the schedel of the schedel of the schedel the schedel of the schedel of the schedel of the schedel of the schedel the schedel of the schedel of the schedel of the schedel of the schedel the schedel of the schedel of the schedel of the schedel of the schedel the schedel of the viewpoint than was in evidence in either country at the time; it would never have been written had not contact with some of the best minds in England convinced him that some appeal ought to be made to similar elements of the population in America.

"The Broken Heart" was based upon an incident of the times whose pathos had aroused the sympathy of all Britain. In this theme Irving saw an opportunity to write upon a subject already of interest, which was admirably adapted to his pen. The sketch received wide praise at the time, but it is of interest to-day chiefly as an illustration of the current demand for sentiment, written with grace and sympathy.

RECEPTION OF "THE SKETCH BOOK" IN ENGLAND

American appreciation of "The Sketch Book" determined Irving to seek an English publisher. He turned to John Murray as the most logical literary representative in London, but Murray was dubious about the success of the work in England. The author thereupon sold his English copyright to Miller, who unfortunately failed before many copies of the work reached the public. In his extremity Irving turned again to Scott, who unhesitatingly praised the work as outstanding in originality and charm of expression. Upon the direct request of Sir Walter, Murray reversed his decision and published "The Sketch Book", whose instant and wide popularity proved to him that he had previously been in error. By such a narrow margin did Irving succeed in impressing his merits as a writer upon the critical

-29-



British public, which now received him with enthusiastic approval. A current English weekly remarked: "When we read the description l of English scenery in "The Broken Heart", we are apt to think that description is Mr. Irving's forte, but we are presently convinced that his prevailing power is in natural and sweet pathos."

BRACEBRIDGE HALL

The success of "The Sketch Book" relieved Irving of immediate financial care and prepared the way for future literary successes. In need of a change of scene, Washington and his brother Peter spent a part of the year 1820 upon the Continent, making their headquarters at Paris, where Irving formed a lasting friendship with Thomas Moore, the Irish poet. With renewed vigor Irving now turned his thoughts upon his next literary venture, and the popularity of his sketches of English life decided him further to exploit that field. He decided to give unity to this new work by the introduction of various characters, as did Addison, in which he felt the English public would again recognize the human embodiment of many of their most cherished virtues.

He chose Yorkshire as his locale and created a group of character types typical of a conservative, rural English family of the landholding class. He made the Squire his central character. Eccentric, "rusticated" though he was, he was a staunch upholder of those noble qualities which Irving considered so admirable in English life and so peculiar to England itself. A

1. Pierre M. Irving, Life and Letters of Washington Irving. Vol.1, p.189.

-30-

Britika public, anich mom russived lie vibration in anticial a secondra a culture function secure meanings: "Then we need the description of Satisfied secure in "The Transh Josep", so are and the description that underliption is dr. Evaluate state, one we are provide that meaning the front for both tests means and description.

ALLA PARTECTARS

The subsets of "The divide Door in the divide relay of hand "benoted size and present the approximation of the ordered and an assumed at a drampe of ranks, restinction of the ordered and and which of the relation second is destined, and and which have a relation second is destined a resting internation and the floores the friedman with the one of which and a provide the transformer of the have been of the analytic is proved its thought and all the new of the first and an is the transformer of the first destine with the be appoint and the transformer of the first destine with the be appoint and the transformer of the first destine with the be appoint and the transformer of the first destine of the the appoint and the first and the first destine of the the appoint of the first of the first destine of the the appoint of the first of the first of the first destine the appoint of the first of the first of the first destine of the the appoint of the first of the first of the first destine of the second of the first of the first

ne neede tip a tiples of a consurvative, much failed fails anreade type tiples of a consurvative, much failed fails of the longholding cluse. To pade the soulre his control charge ter. Accountrie, "methoded" though he was, he as a simular scholes of thome noble qualities which fir (ng considered as as scholes is factor fife on as counter to thread is at younger son at Oxford, an older son in the British army, represented careers typical of landed English families. Julia Templeton, the Squire's ward, introduced the necessary element of romance into the narrative. Master Simon, self-constituted authority upon every phase of country life, from hunting to heraldry, was the counterpart of many a well-placed Englishman whom Irving had met as a guest at English country homes. Lady Lillicraft and General Harbottle were immediately recognizable as the faded belle and the convivial ex-army officer seldom missing at family gatherings. Always mindful of the picturesque, Irving drew sympathetic portraits of the Housekeeper and Old Christy, family servants long associated with the Squire's household. Not wishing to ignore the sturdy English yeomanry, he also introduced Ready-Money Jack, whose cherished independence and unique costume always called forth admiration.

In the foreword to "Bracebridge Hall" Irving warns us that the presence of characters by no means indicates an attempt at a novel. Each sketch, or narrative, is illustrative of some English characteristic which the author intends to stress. As he often states, Irving is interested in the social and historical aspects of the country and wishes to comment upon them with the fresh interest of a foreigner thoroughly sympathetic to country and people. Long residence in England and his ancestry, as well as early education, predisposed him to a theme which he was so well qualified to develop.

-31-

-or , die dellas ad al nos ledit at frank an de separat dance a greaderer and bould risk . Fram a antrop als . Hose Frank of romanos into the manual ovi france and control and to thissin achieve the vana-za is vivice and all a bebat . hisdusuoses 'eximple and mile beladeous their education william' bid something the runs have a state in the reaction and the reaction bad . This can be the her to fail the bandhas and the the this of the

"THE HALL"

In this introductory sketch the author present to us a fine old English country residence or manor-house, together with its eauqlly fine old master. It is a typical half-timbered structure of somewhat rambling construction, with wings added to the original building during prosperous periods of the family's history. With his love for the outdoor world, Irving gives us a charming picture of an old formal garden, with its curiously trimmed hedges, stone balustrades, and gay garden plots. He is at pains to assure us that the Squire is not a member of the hardriding, hard-drinking, fox-hunting school. His worst fault, it would seem, is "a bigoted devotion to old English manners and customs". He is kind-hearted, immensely proud of his ancient ancestry, and positively scornful of the newly-created nobility. Mindful that future sketches will supply the reader with necessary details of background and character, Irving merely suggests in this the atmosphere which he wishes to recreate.

"THE BUSY MAN"

As one soon discovers upon further acquaintance with Master Simon, the title of this sketch is ironical. Master Simon is the personification of unsuccessful industry. A bachelor, he is able to indulge unreproved every whim and crochet. As the Squire's representative, he is armed with considerable authority over the household, and as a man of leisure, he is enabled to express his

-32-

100-101-22-101

With assigned , as bell- sound to monoblast withood delight Lio bail the enority fine off medics. It is a trainer bolt-simple at int thevelow of an old formal parties, with its contours the se al an offin helman and this subardanies build , as por les riding, hant-drinking, for-bunding consol. All worst fault, it draises chi le hore vienne. Detre de chile at al ."amotane .edustres of pecial of detria eradion data and a this at

"MELS SIST SAL

ser Sizon, the Mitle of this eksten further acquaintence with seater Sizon, the Mitle of this eksten is ironical. A basher Sizon is the personification of unracessarial industry. A basher of a oris to innelige thread over aver, which wild ersonative is the equinrepresentative, be to analy rith consideration and or source, is the equirepresentative, be to analy rith consideration is and equibased and as a sum of televise, difference state of the based of a finally of the state, difference of the state of the talents in a variety of ways. He is a self-styled authority upon hunting and falconry and has a costume for every branch of sport. He possesses a flute and a violin and is a devotee of old English music, but no one considers him a successful musician. He believes himself an able artist with the pencil, but his landscapes are far from notable. A bustling little man, he is busy from dawn to dark upon errands of fancied importance.

Yet there is one who refuses to recognize his genius or admit his superiority. Old Christy, who was in the Bracebridge stable long before the Squire was born, resolutely disputes his orders and contradicts his assumption of knowledge. A wiry old fellow, testy and opinionated, he can narrate the details of every fox hunt for the last sixty years and he it was who taught Master Simon all that he knows about the stable and the hunt. Irving makes him out a perfect type of the old family servant, who has served so long that he considers himself the equal of any in the family.

A conference between the two is interrupted by the arrival of an imposing calvacade which winds down the elm-shaded avenue. It is led by an imposing elderly lady, in broad-brimmed beaver hat and ancient riding habit, mounted upon a sleek white pony. A uniformed flunkey rides behind her and the procession is concluded with a clumsy old coach, of ancient pattern and luxurious appointments. A prim lady's maid of forbidding demeanor is visible from within. It is none other than Lady Lillicraft, the Squire's sister, come upon a visit. Her arrival is the signal for great activity upon the part of Master Simon, and we are made to realize that

-33-

-----as a viriety of arous. as is a call-poiled submarity a ca swelled an ana one bonaldone all Suggessiat shile an inc. of an The manual state of the state of the second second second and the state of the second se all appent weilway . Junic and her blueba one succes awour of fact IJ. the superball type of the flat family convert, and bady bady of a . audova beballa-elo one intel that the blad devis analyles anlingst me h the reverses balanted - Decid al . tout firstering an included as we bell of at - take A . there as here that a most boursers . Mans making another how the a clump blo canno, of another softers and install and some of that . It is noted a that that the start, the senter is sinter a

here indeed is a personage.

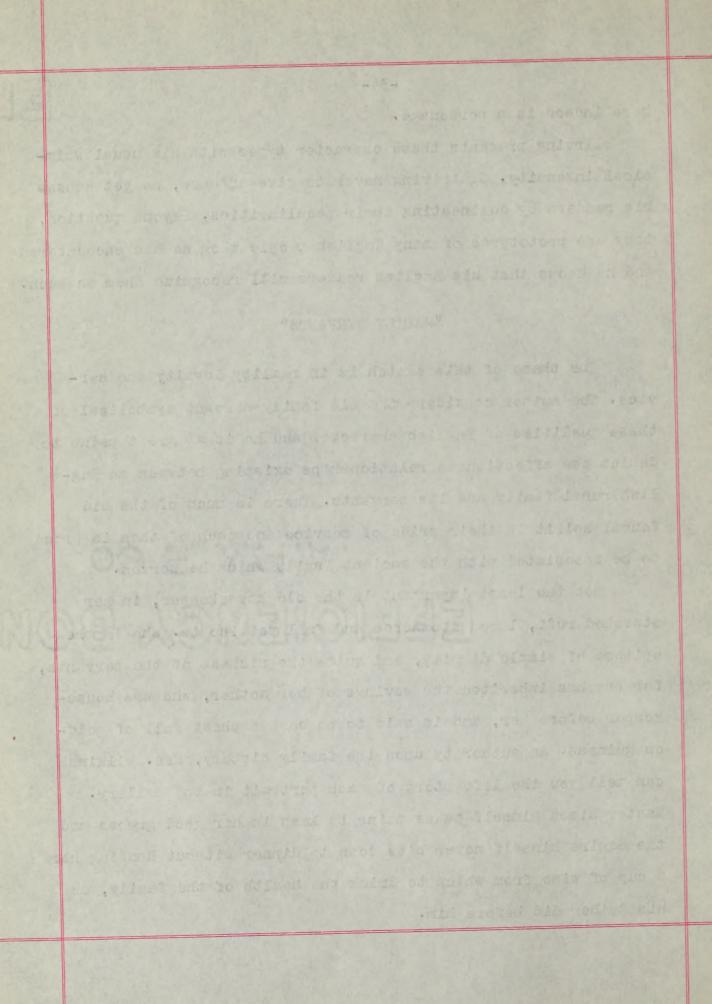
Irving presents these character types with his usual whimsical ingenuity. Contriving never to give offense, he yet amuses his readers by delineating their peculiarities. Beyond question, they are prototypes of many English people whom he has encountered and he knows that his English readers will recognize them as such.

"FAMILY SERVANTS"

The theme of this sketch is in reality loyalty and service. The author considers the old family servant symbolical of these qualities of English character and he is at great pains to depict the affectionate relationships existing between an English rural family and its servants. There is much of the old feudal spirit in their pride of service and each of them is proud to be associated with the ancient family which he serves.

Not the least important is the old housekeeper, in her starched ruff, laced stomacher and full petticoats. She is the epitome of simple dignity, and quite the richest of the servants, for she has inherited the savings of her mother, who was housekeeper before her, and is said to possess a chest full of golden guineas. An authority upon the family history, Mrs. Wilkins can tell you the life story of each portrait in the gallery. Master Simon himself takes pains to keep in her good graces and the Squire himself never sits down to dinner without handing her a cup of wine from which to drink the health of the family, as his father did before him.

-34-



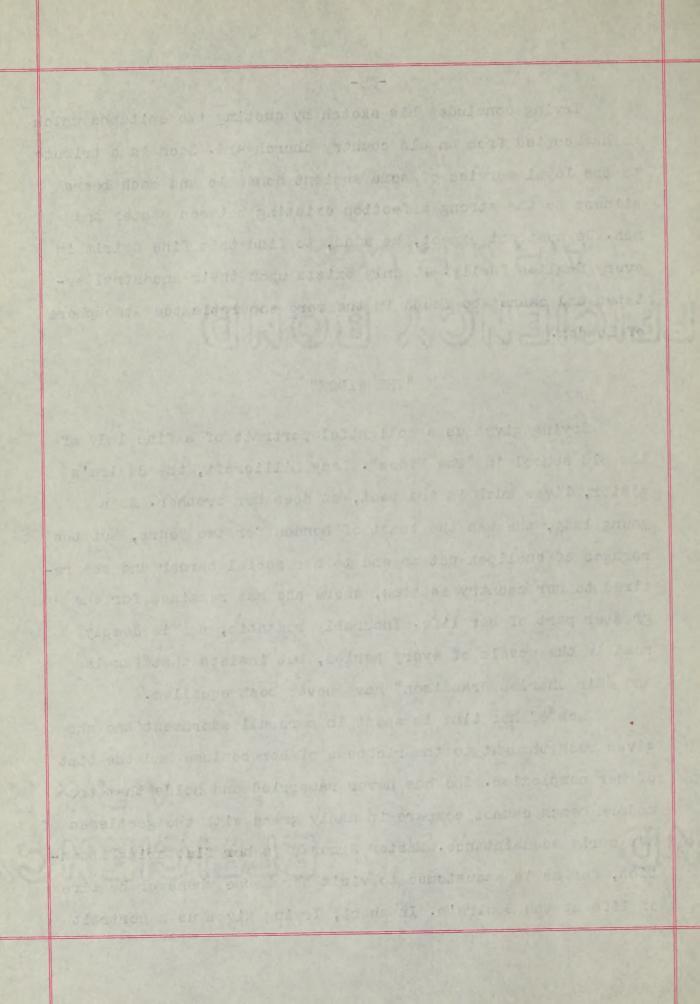
Irving concludes his sketch by quoting two epitaphs which he has copied from an old country churchyard. Each is a tribute to the loyal service of some ancient domestic and each bears witness to the strong affection existing between master and man. We must not expect, he adds, to find this fine spirit in every English family. It only exists upon their ancestral estates and cannot be found in the more sophisticated atmosphere of London.

"THE WIDOW"

Irving gives us a delightful portrait of a fine lady of the old school in "The Widow". Lady Lillicraft, the Squire's sister, lives much in the past, as does her brother. As a young lady, she was the toast of London for two years, but the ravages of smallpox put an end to her social career and she retired to her country estates, where she has remained for the greater part of her life. Incurably romantic, she is deeply read in the novels of every period, but insists that "Pamela" and "Sir Charles Grandison" have never been equalled.

Much of her time is spent in personal adornment and she gives much thought to the richness of her costume and the tint of her complexion. She has never remarried and holds that the modern beaux cannot compare in manly grace with the gentlemen of her early acquaintance. Master Simon pays her flattering attention, for he is accustomed to visit her house whenever he tires of life at the Squire's. In short, Irving gives us a portrait

-35-



of a very human old lady, a little pathetic, a trifle ridiculous, but eternally true to life in any age or any clime. It seems needless to add that Irving never could have entertained us with such whimsical and accurate depictions of English character types, had he not frequently encountered them in the flesh during his long sojourn in England.

"FAMILY RELICS"

Realizing that personality is often revealed quite as much by inanimate objects as by speech or act, Irving in this sketch give us rather detailed descriptions of the library and the portrait gallery at the Hall. In spite of his Oxford degree, the Squire is little of a bibliophile, confining his reading largely to works on agriculture and hunting. Most of the volumes found in the library are novels and they have been read largely by the romantic youth of passing generations, if one may judge by the written comment upon the margins of their pages. Ardent love passages seem to have pleased them most. Among the poets this same passion for the love theme seems to have existed and the windowpanes of library and bedroom are covered with poetic quotations etched thereupon by the diamond of some infatuated belle or gallant.

But it is the portrait gallery that Irving holds up to us as most significant of family tradition and pride. Here is a kind of pictorial narrative more suggestive than words. Take, for instance, this portrait of a little girl, in billowing skirt and picture hat, with a hoop under her arm. Master Simon tells us that she was

-36-

a many panun old loof, a Mittle publichic, a voirie voire voire, at periodally true to life in any age or any other. It seemaneed and to and the front boots dopid any other although in and dimit of and assumets deniories of sadifier simmoire train, had a not frequently encoratered them to the free during line tory door to enclose.

ochogiche dissant of som in a second relle or reliant. "at 11 is the portrait endiers that from wold up to us as algolflownt of fortig and lot addiries the offer instansolution method spin and supportive the rorge. This instanas portrait of a 11522 stri. In tillowing wire and picture at portrait of a 11522 stri. In tillowing wire and picture at portrait of a 1000 and an a sector from tells we call a a famous beauty of the family, an assertion fully borne out by the portrait next seen, which shows her in her wedding gown.

This group of portraits represents four sisters, equally famous for their charm and beauty, who held court in the old Hall a hundred years ago. Here is a gallant colonel in full regimentals, the husband of the belle mentioned, who, alas, fell upon a foreign battlefield. As Irving presents these portraits he makes the reader feel that he is in reality showing us a kind of pictorial history of England, for the history of the nation is after all but the history of innumerable English families of which this is a type.

"AN OLD SOLDIER"

One of the most picturesque of the guests at the Hall is old General Harbottle, typical of the retired British military man who has seen more years than service, but who made the most of his few encounters and nourished a fierce spirit of militarism. He has served in India and upon the Continent, but was promoted and laid upon the shelf when the need for real leaders asserted itself. But he must uphold the dignity of the Service and the social graces of the man of arms, which he accomplishes with a great air of distinction. None can equal him as a gourmet and a judge of old vintages. He is met with everywhere at fashionable gatherings and he is courtesy personified to the ladies, though given to frequent profanity in private. Irving must have met many of the type at garden parties and week-end hunting meets and

-37 -

.

since souther an entities and in the second state of the state of the second state provided and the set of a provide of the local and the the buy and at dam a lingth out . terroristic of the second there , the second the second to back out on Lis may at a the other out in a finall set , bestind to metal our dense and the Decision and to include, offrontice densed and foto deal pristant leve we been add man lies and regulat the stratiliass of trateriovo of 1. for il of . . sognast bit in spull strand is the te out of terrare retries at an bac series the word low a low that whe at the start word bet and

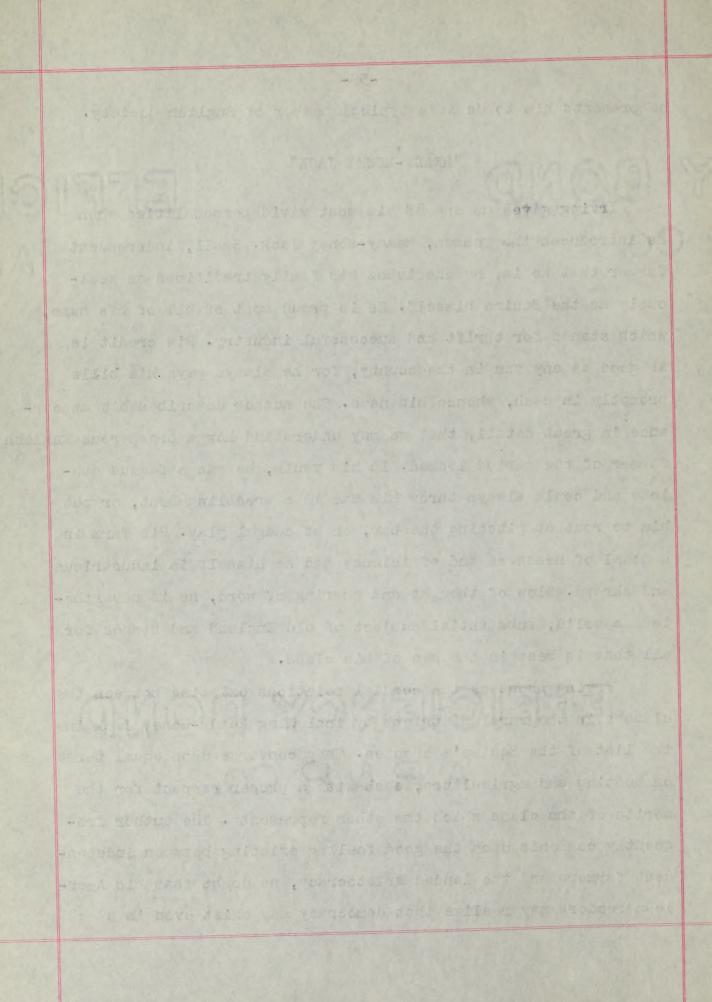
he presents him to us as a typical member of English society.

"READY-MONEY JACK"

Irving gives us one of his most vivid personalities when he introduces the yeoman, Ready-Money Jack. Small, independent farmer that he is, he cherishes his family traditions as zealously as the Squire himself. He is proud most of all of his name, which stands for thrift and successful industry. His credit is as good as any man in the county, for he always pays his bills promptly in cash, whence his name. The author describes his appearance in great detail, that we may understand how a prosperous English farmer of the period looked. In his youth, he was a famous athlete and could always throw his man in a wrestling bout, or put him to rout at pitching the bar, or at cudgel play. His farm is a model of neatness and efficiency and he himself is industrious and shrewd. Slow of thought and sparing of word, he is nevertheless a solid, substantial subject of old England and stands for all that is best in the men of his class.

Irving shows us the cordial relations existing between the classes in the rural districts by including Ready-Money Jack in the list of the Squire's cronies. They converse upon equal terms on hunting and agriculture, each with a proper respect for the merits of the class which the other represents. The author frequently comments upon the good feeling existing between independent farmers and the landed aristocracy, no doubt that his American readers may realize that democracy may exist even in a

-38-



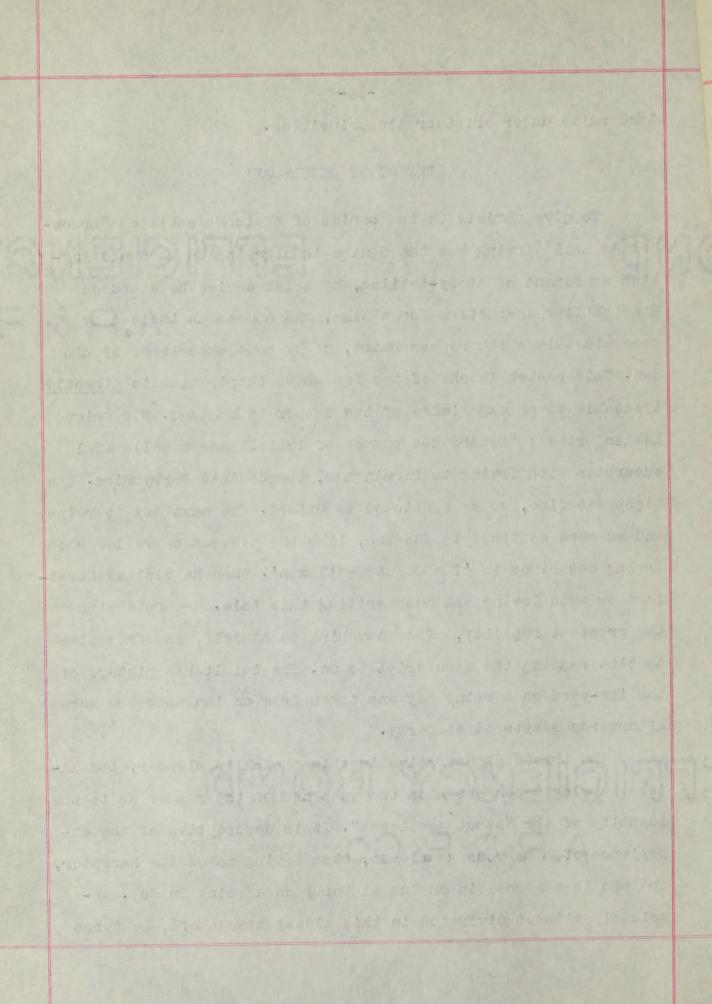
land ruled under aristocratic principles.

"THE STOUT GENTLEMAN"

To give variety to the series of sketches entitled "Bracebridge Hall" Irving has the Squire indulge in the good old English amusement of story-telling, by which device he abandons his familiar characters for a time, and amuses us instead by some old tale which he has heard, or by some experience of his own. This sketch is one of the few whose inspiration is directly traceable to an experience of the author in England. His friend Leslie writes: "Toward the summer of 1821 I made a delightful excursion with Irving to Birmingham, thence into Derbyshire. The night was fine, so we continued to Oxford. The next day it rained and we were confined to the Inn, like the nervous traveller whom Irving describes in 'The Stout Gentleman'. When he visited Stratford on Avon Irving was busy writing this tale. He wrote with the greatest repidity, often laughing to himself, and from time to time reading the manuscript to me. The inimitable picture of the inn-yard on a rainy day was taken from an inn where we were afterwards quartered at Derby."

The thread of narrative in this sketch is slender, its interest being dependent upon the suspense of the reader as to the identity of the "stout gentleman". It is descriptive of the experience of a nervous gentleman, whom Irving makes the narrator, and who is marconed in an inn at Derby on a rainy Sunday. Absolutely without diversion in this gloomy atmosphere, he turns

-39-



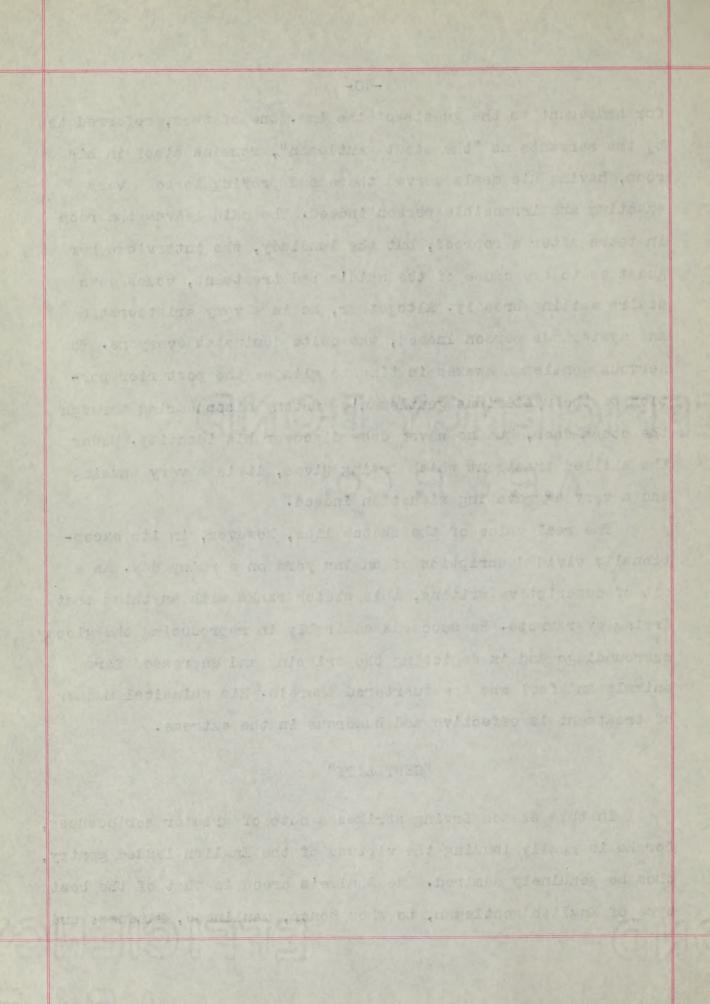
for amusement to the guests of the inn. One of them, referred to by the servants as "the stout gentleman", remains aloof in his room, having his meals served there and proving to be a very exacting and irrascible person indeed. The maid leaves the room in tears after a reproof, but the landlady, who interviews her guest as to the cause of the maid's bad treatment, comes down stairs smiling broadly. Altogether, he is a very aristocratic and mysterious person indeed, who quite dominates everyone. The nervous gentleman awakes in time to glimpse the posterior portion of the mysterious gentleman's anatomy disappearing through the coach door, but he never does discover his identity. Under the skilled treatment which Irving gives, it is a very amusing and a very aggravating situation indeed.

The real value of the sketch lies, however, in its exceptionally vivid description of an inn yard on a rainy day. As a bit of descriptive writing, this sketch ranks with anything that Irving ever wrote. He succeeds admirably in reproducing the gloomy surroundings and in depicting the dripping and depressed farm animals and fowl who are quartered therein. His whimsical manner of treatment is effective and humorous in the extreme.

"GENTILITY"

In this sketch Irving strikes a note of greater seriousness, for he is really lauding the virtues of the English landed gentry, whom he genuinely admired. The Squire's creed is that of the best type of English gentleman, to whom honor, manliness, kindness and

-40-



good breeding were far more than mere abstractions. Perhaps that rather hackneyed term "noblesse oblige" would sum up his attitude accurately, a philosophy of life with which Irving heartily sympathized.

The occasion that calls forth this presentment of the Squire's beliefs is the departure of his son Guy as an officer of the British army. The Squire asserts that military life would be merely a butcher's trade, were it not leavened by such qualities of character as bravery, patriotism, and ambition. He warns his son to avoid the coldly indifferent pose fashionable among officers at the time, and assures him the true qualities of an English gentleman are inbred and do not change.

Through the mouth of the Squire, Irving attacks the polished hardness of Chesterfield's philosophy. "Many of Lord Chesterfield's maxims would make a young man a mere man of pleasure; but an English gentleman should not be a mere man of pleasure. He has no right to such selfish indulgence. His ease, his opulence, are debts due to his country, which he must stand ready to discharge. He should be a man at all points; simple, frank, courteous, intelligent, accomplished, and informed."

1

"THE STUDENT OF SALAMANCA"

This is a narrative of considerable length, not a sketch. It is told by a bold Irish captain of dragoons and is an example of the romantic tale so well liked in Irving's day. It concerns 1. Washington Irving, Bracebridge Hall, p. 555.

-41-

and mention represent to the tout there about represent to a - ivel notion date of hi in when to him a ... for summer shufflare . San Maligery a TELDING ON "costine is an an an ato to sustaine of the addition of states from other warding to de property select, all and the state of the select t any since of Lotan of Jon 11, and a state the automa a virtue to . assiste des tes bassist and there and he had be to the at hard in wash" . doordilling a "letterstand" to ste what is the feast the store and all appointed at the owner of the owners -d' , theatened , test , the states fin d' 102 a so differin 2 ". bernotet bue , boda liger pos , thas billed spransing at . and the int but it it out a state plan and an and it is a line of the second is here to the -

a young Spanish student of noble blood named Antonio de Castros, an old Spanish gentleman absorbed in a search for the ancient formula for the transmutation of base metals to gold, and his charming daughter Inez. The villain of the piece is a dissolute Spanish nobleman named Don Ambrosio. The scene of the action is the old Spanish city of Granada.

Antonio, while rambling about the old ruins of the town, catches a glimpse of the fair Inez and immediately falls in love. As the lady is characteristically Spanish in her attitude toward strangers, Antonio is unable to see her, until a misadventure of the old Alchemist, who is severely burned in his laboratory in an old tower, as the result of his experimentations, gives him an opportunity to burst in the door and rescue the old gentleman. After this, Antonio joins the old man in his chemical research and becomes a member of the family. But his suit does not prosper and he astonished to find her in conversation with a gallant stranger one evening in the garden. He cannot believe her guilty of a clandestine adventure, but is forced to accept the evidence of his own eyes.

One evening the house is invaded by strange men, who seize the old alchemist and his daughter. The father disappears, while the daughter is carried to the palace of Don Ambrosio, who has marked her for his own. Inez learns through a young gypsy dancer, one of the Don's former sweethearts, that her father is on trial by the Inquisition as a necromancer. Don Ambrosio tells her that, if she will accede to his wishes, her father shall be

-42-

al moliton oils to theperator, gineralat and Dependence of de Charje Automate, while successing any the data that the horas . VICALIERTER, VIS LEWERNER, The LEWER SECTOR DEPENDENCE MER DER DER to one by hear of a class of white or white a solution of the forest to the age ave lande 3" ule and the pas - PARACTA MULL - Thurst I and Land . The side Mon and Loaden a state in the input of a second of the second of the second of the second of the saved, but she scorns to win her father's release at such a price. Meanwhile, with the aid of the gypsy, she escapes from the palace and wanders into the square of Granada in time to see her father in a procession of prisoners on their way to the auto da fe. When she pleads with the monks for her father's life, she is seized by Don Ambrosio, who has discovered here there, and is accused by him of madness. Just as she is about to be dragged away, Antonio appears, wounds Don Ambrosio in an encounter, reveals his relationship to the Grand Inquisitor, who releases the old Alchemist. The romance ends fittingly with the marriage of the lovers and Antonio reveals his identity as a wealthy nobleman of Spain.

The narrative is written in the colorful manner of the romantic tale and the author does full justice to its dramatic possibilities. The action is rapid and the suspense well sustained, while Irving handles the Spanish background of the tale with the sympathy and understanding which he later displays in his narratives of that country. Characters and background are typically Latin and the tale undoubtedly shows the influence of Irving's continental ramblings and the literature of the countries which he visited.

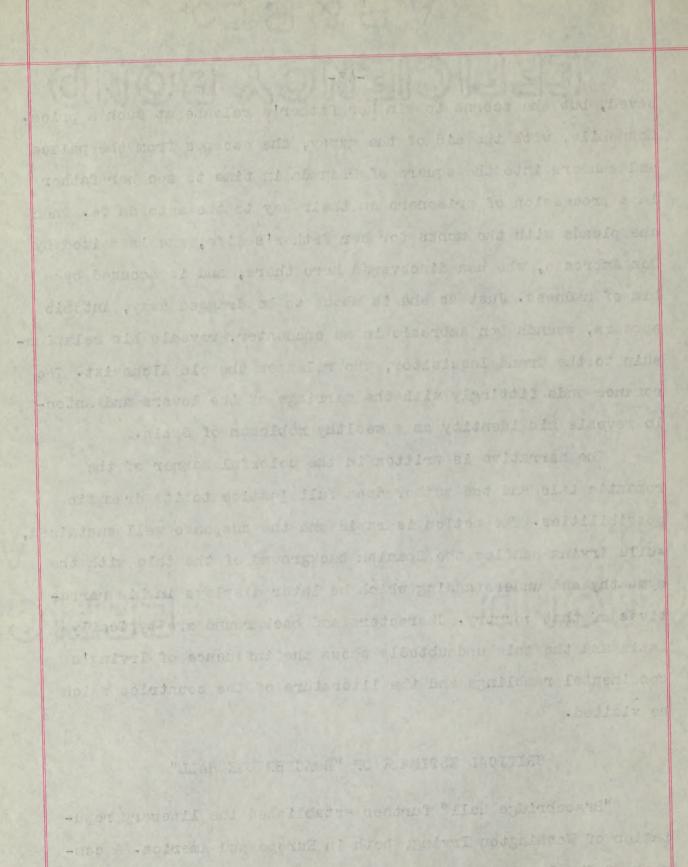
CRITICAL ESTIMATE OF "BRACEBRIDGE HALL"

"Bracebridge Hall" further established the literary reputation of Washington Irving, both in Europe and America. A comment of Charles Dudley Warner is pertinent here. He wrote: "He--Irving--was sought by everybody. His writings won for him the

1

1. Charles Dudley Warner, Studies of Irving, p. 48-49.

-43-



and of there and average is merchant, have. So mater "age.

. includes there . tonales of Invince

entry to the highest social circles in the kingdom, where he was welcome as a friend and not as a curiosity of a day, and his footing was equally good with his brethren of the quill. To mention his companions would be to name most of the literary lights of the time, and his relations with many of them were those of the most cordial friendship."

Irving has attained a finish of style that surpasses that of "The Sketch Book". He writes with the polished ease of the established literary man and his imagination and humorous whimsicality are never better illustrated. As a critic of life, he is penetrating but never caustic; sophisticated without being cynical. He has taken old material, as he writes in his introduction, but he has handled it with a charm and distinction that have won the admiration of all.

CONTINENTAL RAMBLINGS

In order to understand the source of Irving's inspiration for his next work, "Tales of a Traveller", it is necessary to follow him to the Continent, where he sought rest for a period of a few months. His health, never robust, had suffered severely as the result of his sedentary life. He suffered from a tormenting cutaneous malady which made walking impossible and irritated him out of the mood of composition. All his life afterward he was assailed by this and it accounts for much of his occasional depression.

August of 1822 found him journeying from one German spa to

-44-

entry to the alchest social dirates in the rington, where in yes volumes as a friend and hat as a curicater of a day, and his footing as caually good with his browless of the inill, wo mathing the oscentions would be to the browless of the literary lists of the black and the relations with any of them ware blacks of the black and the relations with any of them ware

Invine hotoincompliate of anote which the serie way durphase that of "the hotoh hot". Is writely with the children when of the setablished literary way and his incylution and husored with the presention of the incylution. A second without he he is provided. The new of a set of a set of a literary optical. The here have of a set of, as he arites in his introduction. Not he has headled it with a set to in his introtation of an set of a set of a set of the indication the set on the his indication of all site with a set of the his internetion and here here and a set of a set of the his indication the set on the histing of all.

BERTING AT JULY STITUE

tor oir dexte vorte, "takes of a fremelion", it is medemark to for oir dexte vorte, "takes of a fremelion", it is medemark to follow him to the fontituent, where he month rest for a poried of a few bondes. Als health, never robuch, har suffered severair, as the result of his sedentery life, so suffered from a tormontaths entaneous solaty spice rade walling indentities has light. Save also the the food of compaction will be life withing to have also at it and it adeounts for all his life withing to bake also at it are not it adeounts for all his life withing to bake also at it are not it adeounts for all he life withing to bake also at a solar of it adeounts for all he life withing to bake also at a solar of it adeounts for all he life withing to bake also at a solar of it adeounts for all he with the state of a life was also at a solar of it adeounts for all he is a constant of

a many and have have been a subscription of the same

another. Always he is interested in the human types characteristic of the locality. At Mayence he writes his sister in England: "I have taken a bath at the old philosopher's, who is quite original; an author, a lawyer, a chemist--had I known the old gentleman a little earlier he would have given me some excellent hints for my alchemist." At Baden he was much interested in a vast, sub- 1 terranean torture chamber in the old castle, while the Black Forest stirred him to romantic imagings.

Irving spent six months at the Saxon Court at Dresden. He was made much of by the royal family and the society of the capital, and his note book abounds in interesting particulars of his daily experiences. On his return to Paris in September of 1823, Irving found himself out of spirits and unable to accomplish any serious literary work. In order to occupy himself somewhat, he collaborated anonymously with his American friend, John Howard Paine, in adapting to the English stage the French play La Jeunesse de Richlieu and a play in three acts, adapted from La Jeunesse de Henry Cinq, which he rechristened Charles the Second. Payne sold both these plays to the Covent Garden Theatre in London. Charles the Second was produced successfully in May, 1824, but Richlieu, brought out in 1826. was not successful. Here again chance, and his residence in a foreign country, had directed the course of his literary output.

"TALES OF A TRAVELLER"

"Tales of a Traveller", which Irving completed in 1824,

-45-

arotier. Alter in intervence is applied at a subset in andertabis of the interlate. At invence is applied and there is anderta-"" wire is and a brain is there is an intervent. The is quire batter "" and a situate of the out of the out is a district and the "" and a situate contient to an intervent and and the "" and a situate contient to and the at the is a distribute "" and a situate contient to an and the at the set of the "" and a situate of the sould have at the set of the "" and a situate of the sould have at the set of the set of the "" and a situate the sould have at the set of the set of the "" and a situate the sould have at the set of the set of the "" and a situate the sould have at the set of the set of the "" and a situate the sould have at the set of the set of the "" at the situate the sould the set of the set of the set of the "" at the situate the sould the set of the set of the set of the "" at the sould the sould the set of the set of the set of the set of the "" at the sould the sould the set of the set of the set of the set of the "" at the sould the sould the set of the

Artis and and of a the route of all array bours is then der. In the array of a the rout of the the second of the second of the the state of the second of the the second of the second of the the state of the second of the the the function of the second of the formation of the second of the second of the formation of the second of the s

The second of the second

resembled his other work in that it consisted of sketches and tales supernatural or romantic in character. Irving limited himself to this field of literature as yet because he believed himself most effective in it. With the exception of his "History of New York", he had established his reputation by the success of his sketches and romantic tales, while his recent Continental ramblings had furnished much new material to be exploited in this field. He divided his material into four sections, each containing tales of a particular type.

Part First of these tales dealt much with the supernatural, a theme in high favor when superstition still ruled the minds of many. He introduces his characters as guests at a hunting dinner in an English country house. The guests are detained over night by inclement weather, a device which enables him to begin his story-telling in a most natural manner.

"THE ADVENTURE OF MY UNCLE"

An old gentleman, inspired by the storm and the darkness, is persuaded to tell a ghost story, which concerns the travels of his uncle in Normandy. The uncle, overtaken by night while on his travels, bethinks himself of his friendship with a French marquis whose castle he knows is somewhere in the neighborhood. Disinclined to spend the night in a miserable country inn, he decides that he would much better seek the castle of his friend. The Marquis receives him hospitably and the talk after dinner naturally turns upon the past glories of the Marquis' family. The nobleman does

-46-

man - Adam "to pursuits" add in molidence and sil add at avidoutle from the in the associate within the second of the second of the second of a second s all and Lateralized theory win slide , and a olderation that scholor an about side of basic is as of Latertan ver dout adatting be ic . Lid solarisance are , encited total state falses with betty? . Mergin Mericaldana

Adde is textioned, issuired or the store and in deciders, eroision is text a close ator, star coordered is invested at adde is intend. The article, every seen a sign and the investor of at ote, betimes himself or his relevant at sign and the server are been able as there is forentiate in the second renative are been then the distribute in the second renative and area better and the distribute of all friends. The second and all area bits better and the sale of all friends. The second and all area bits better and the sale of all friends. The second area wild area bits better and the sale of all friends and the second for and the sale area of all friends. The second area and the rank play he of the sale of the sale of the second area and the rank play he of the sale of the sale of the second area. full justice to the glories of his race until the uncle, quite overcome, desires to retire for the night. The room assigned him is in a tower in the most ancient part of the castle. Numerous famous historical personages have occupied it and the Englishman, an intrepid soul, is glad to occupy it also, in spite of the grimaces of the wrinkled old French servant who ushers him to bed.

Unable to close the door leading into the corridor, the uncle builds a roaring fire in the great stone fireplace and clambers into bed. His thoughts busy with the day's events, he is just losing consciousness when his attention is attracted by a light footstep in the corridor. A servant about his duties, he decides, and gives the matter no further thought. But the steps approach, a female form in white enters the open door and crosses to the fireplace. Her dress is of ancient pattern, with full skirts and reaching to the floor. She is tall and of a most commanding presence, with a face whose whiteness cannot conceal a remarkable beauty. The ghost, for it <u>is</u> a ghost, warms herself before the fire, clasping her hands in supplication, then glides from the room.

The old gentleman awakes the next morning and demands an explanation from the Marquis. Walking through the former's portrait gallery, he recognizes the likeness of his midnight visitor. This, it seems, is the portrait of the Duchess de Longueville, and the narration of her importance and adventures consumes the remainder of the morning. She had lived more than a century

-47-

Tail incluse of the single of a grant he i to anoth, with a rear , as real to retire for the write. The rear at there in to in a taken is the same weatent part of the califor equation aroun state. a for someon investments it wit the spectrum and there he and the compy it is in a the of the science of the mended of the compy it is a the science of the mended of the comp it is a the science of the mended of the common here and the the science of the mended of the common here and the the science of the mended of the common here and the the science of the mended of the common here and an the

Machie to diord the most is denot the the services, and their fulles a rearist time in the press stand (Strumerand) of note the not the thought in any dails events, as in the first losing purchases that his signifier is the detian, is notifies, and start the masker do fraction brought had the start doubles, and start is while which the most door and start and the theories is the instant of anti-the most door and start and reacting to the instant of anti-the most door and start and reacting to the instant of anti-the most door and start and reacting to the instant of a first of a start start and reacting to the instant of a start that the start and reacting to the instant of a start of a start start and reacting to the instant of a start of the start and reacting to the instant of a start of a start and reacting to the instant of a start of the start and reacting to the instant of a start of the start and reacting to the instant of a start of the start and the start of the start of a start of the start and the start of the start, start of the start of the

The old contients are to the the control of the serve of

before and had played an important part in the civil war of the Fronde. Her husband, the Duke de Longueville, had been captured. The Duchess, trying to arouse the Normans to the rescue, was threatened with imprisonment herself. To escape this, she left her castle at night in a tempest and attempted to board a vessel at the coast, together with her retinue. The storm prevented the attempt and she had instead sought refuge at the castle of the Marquis, to whose ancestors the fair Duchess had been related. The Duchess had occupied the tower room. Something tragic had occured to her, but what it was the Marquis refused to divulge. When the Englishman told him that he had received a visit from the lady's ghost, the Marquis refused to credit him, and the conversation came to an abrupt conclusion.

"THE ADVENTURE OF MY AUNT"

This is another tale of the supernatural which must have had many a counterpart in English wonder stories. It is of rather slight significance and requires little comment. In brief, it tells of the nocturnal adventure of a particularly strong-minded widow, who moved to a manor house in the desolate Derbyshire hills, much to the dismay of her servants. As she sat alone before her dressing table one night, she happened to glance at the reflection in her mirror of her late husband's portrait, which hung upon the wall directly behind her. It seemed to her that one of his eyes winked at her. She contrived to cover her eyes with her hand, under pretense of dressing her hair, and studied the portrait more

-48-

Another and a substitut one is the the sight and at the another are the rad, is a hand the borgential; but been additioned. The subset, brains to restand in harman be the indeme, and and and will be to bother in a sole of the bound of a set of the data and the is a bother indential attended to book one sole to the data and the is a bother indential attended to book one sole to the data and the is a bother indential attended to book one sole to the data and the is a bother indential attended to book one sole to the data attended to the is a bother indential in a shell in the sole attended to bother indential at a book one in the sole of the sole attended to bother indential at a sole of the sole of the sole attended to the sole of the sole of the sole of the sole attended to the sole of the sole of the sole of the sole attended to the sole of the sole of the sole of the sole attended to the sole of the sole of the sole of the sole attended to the sole of the sole of the sole of the sole of the sole attended to the sole of the sole of the sole of the sole of the sole attended to the sole of the sole of

Sadding The So area with a sitt.

Here and a sector balo of the approximit with the large and the large large and a sector to the sector large large and the matter to the sector to the sector large light of the article and the matter of the sector large light of the determine a sector of the determine large and the sector large large and the sector large l

closely. Again she thought she detected a movement of one of the eyes. After busying herself quietly for a moment about the room, she opened the door and left the room.

Arousing the servants, she returned with them to her room and ordered them to tear down the picture. At this, a hollow groan came from behind the portrait and the servants scattered from the room in alarm. Driving them back, the intrepid widow compelled them to obey her orders. The displaced portrait revealed a former servant of the household, whose trembling hand clutched a knife of formidable appearance. He offered no resistance and was quickly removed from the premises.

This tale is scarcely more than an expanded anecdote. While it is of little literary value, it does illustrate the author's ability to tell a tale delightfully, for he makes the most of a rather slight situation, and gives it dramatic interest and convincing characterization sufficient to hold the interest to the end.

"THE BOLD DRAGOON"

The background of this tale of the supernatural is the ancient city of Bruges in Flanders, which Irving had visited in his recent travels in France. He describes the quaint, gabled houses with a stork's nest in every chimney, the broad-faced vrouws with their white caps and starched skirts, and the stolid, shrewd-eyed men, with a pipe as their constant companion.

The Irish captain of dragoons is the narrator and his old

-49-

ets to and to ster avoir leadent and instants of one of the . moon and the bar had bert the mone. touter to due he have to due the success " the level of the to the set verstalt forei galidate et about flotation end ac drawted anticita pe has branches of foreite or reconcept of indication to affind a . Widlands mis upit Levenny Minches Bar The first with the second provided a state of the state of the state of the a la chiere said as la confidences de la conference des des la confidence des confidences de la to to start a test a test of the start of the start a field of the . 1916 the lite , which is the forest of the sources of a start the start of the theor + the state of the rear all and the state the base filoss and the establish because and astal all dits another . acliesmos dandeers all's ce gain a dille area bare-boeni

dragoon uncle is the hero of the tale, which occured in the days when the English were fighting in the Low Countries. The bold dragoon on his way back to England finds himself at Bruges, with a hostile population unwilling to give him entertainment for the night. At length he stops at a little inn, before which a rich burgher of Antwerp, a little distiller from Geneva, and the bottle-nosed host were taking their ease. A bluff old soldier, he ignores their rebuffs and compels them to give him refuge for the night. He cracks jokes with the good vrouw, chucks the landlord's daughter under the chin, regales them with stories of the wars, and wins their enthusiastic approval by the time he has been there an hour.

He is lodged for the night in an attic room, which is used as a repository for old furniture. The room is filled with old, broken-down chairs, a hugh clothes press, a sofa, tables with curiously carved legs, and all the discarded lumber of generations. The bold dragoon climbs between sundry feather beds, but his numerous potations and his naturally warm disposition makes it impossible for him to sleep. He arises and wanders about the inn to cool himself. As he returns to his own quarters, he catches a weird, wheezy strain of music, apparently coming from his own room. He enters silently and discovers a thin, bearded old gentleman in a nightcap, who has an old, broken-down bellows under his elbow and is playing it as if it were a bagpipe. Two richly-upholstered chairs are dancing about the room in each other's arms. The shovel and the tongs are solemnly engaged in a minuet, while a three-legged

-50-

Aven out it better at a said with an its the bland of the bland of the and and activity was added in the standard the second description of the standard and a second an intervention and a the second of a dear way the second and and the second in another a state is a second to despine the state -tod and have surrend works all doubt all the provided to remain by and sublished the second statist exact the states of the second s "Less Lina" and anothing, moore free and the state of all a to the · 1. 2. 21 invalue notion, done while about containing act property as ble stin calling at aquirante . orts forest ele mit gettlen to ald. and the manual states and the state state and the state and - inform and interest the restance configuration of a low fees aport barrain restances the self interest of halfs in the subject subject to sense in the self of the set all . As he wanted to illy any thirthere, he colours a solar of the astrilles at mail deep die intront and a removed to be the the miller stole als the stall and share and the start als a store and the attait to sold to be attained to the state of the state of the state of the state of the The relevant the share a braine about of most and successformer of

stool does a solitary hornpipe in the corner. Not to outdone in jollity, the bold dragoon seizes the cumbersome clothes-press by the handles and drags her about the room. Instantly the confusion ceases. The old man vanishes up the chamber, each article of furniture returns sheepishly to its accustomed place, and the room presents a quiet appearance as before.

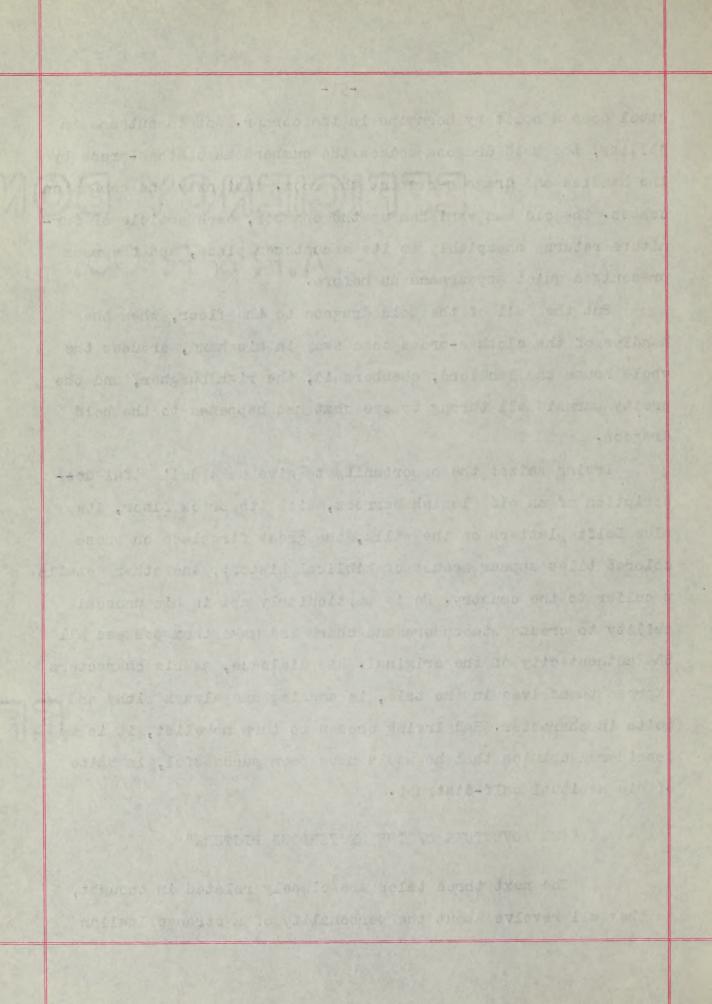
But the fall of the bold dragoon to the floor, when the handles of the clothes-press come away in his hand, arouses the whole house and landlord, chambermaid, the righ burgher, and the pretty barmaid all throng to see what has happened to the bold dragoon.

Irving seizes the opportunity to give us a delightful description of an old Flemish barroom, with its brick floor, its blue Delft platters on the walls, the great fireplace on whose colored tiles appear scenes of biblical history, and other details peculiar to the country. He is particularly apt in his unusual ability to create atmosphere and charm and make them possess all the authenticity of the original. His dialogue, as his characters express themselves in the tale, is amusing and always pithy and quite in character. Had Irving chosen to turn novelist, it is my considered opinion that he would have been successful, in spite of his habitual self-distrust.

"THE ADVENTURE OF THE MYSTERIOUS PICTURE"

The next three tales are closely related in thought, as they all revolve about the personality of a strange Italian

-51-

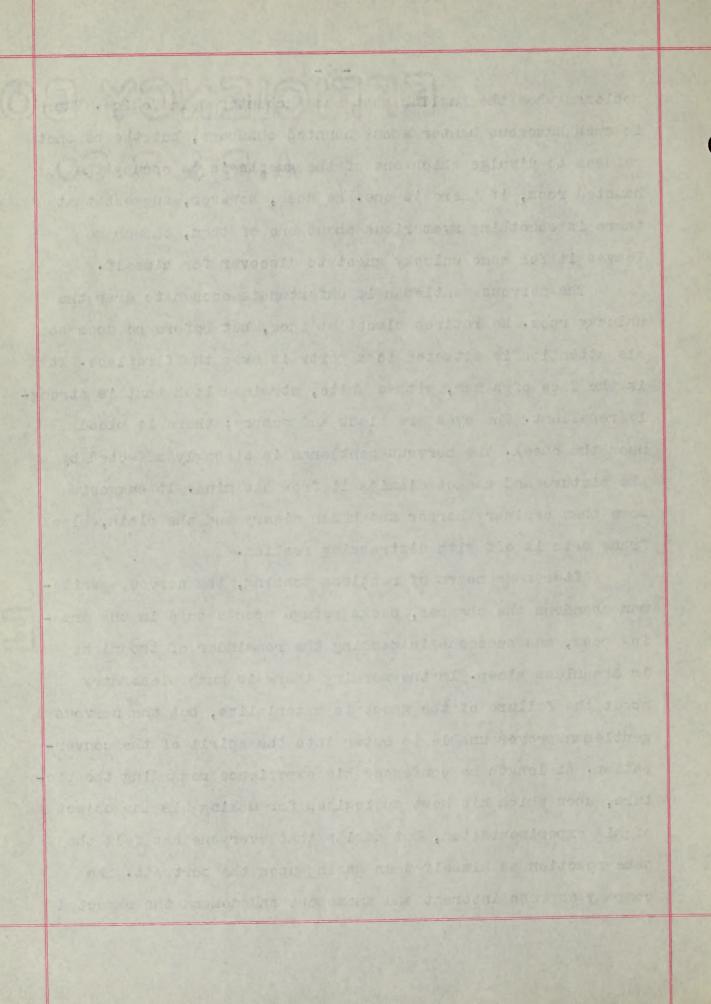


nobleman whom the English host has encountered in Venice. There is much humorous banter about haunted chambers, but the baronet refuses to divulge which one of the guests is to occupy the haunted room, if there is one. He does, however, suggest that there is something mysterious about one of them, though he leaves it for some unlucky guest to discover for himself.

The nervous gentleman is unfortunate enough to draw the unlucky room. He retires almost at once, but before he does so his attention is attacted to a portrait over the fireplace. It is the face of a man, with a white, strained look that is strongly repellent. The eyes are black and sombre; there is blood upon the cheek. The nervous gentleman is strongly affected by the picture and cannot dismiss it from his mind. It suggests more than ordinary horror and human misery and the plain, black frame sets it off with distressing realism.

After some hours of restless tossing, the nervous gentleman abandons the chamber, seeks refuge upon a sofa in the drawing room, and succeeds in passing the remainder of the night in dreamless sleep. In the morning there is much pleasantry about the failure of the ghost to materialize, but the nervous gentleman proves unable to enter into the spirit of the conversation. At length he confesses his experience regarding the picture, upon which his host apologizes for making him the object of his experimentation, but admits that everyone has felt the same reaction as himself when gazing upon the portrait. The company express interest and amazement and demand the expected

-52-



story.

"THE ADVENTURE OF THE MYSTERIOUS STRANGER"

-53-

In this narrative Irving draws much upon his familiarity with Venice and Italian history and custom. There is much of Italian subtelty and tragic intrigue, so characteristic of the life of the nobility of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. The narrator of the tale is the English baronet, who had gone as a young man to Venice on the grand tour, after his graduation from the University. He is delighted with the mysterious romance of the place and haunts all kinds of strange places in his search for adventure.

At the casino on the grand square of St. Mark, while sipping an ice one evening, he encounters a young Italian whose extraordinary manner interests him intensely. The youth is tall and slight, with every appearance of refinement. But his pale, emaciated features reveal an inner wretchedness that compels attention. His black eyes are expressive of unutterable woe. After seeing him upon various occasions, the young baronet is attracted to this unhappy young man and seeks his assistance in penetrating the mysteries of Venice.

The English baronet and the young Italian become intimate friends, but there is always a wall of reserve separating them which nothing can break down. The Italian craves human companionship and sympathy, but he will not reveal the cause of his misery. On the contrary, when importuned to take the young Englishman

1251 serios and thelien blatters and enother. There is an in . and to draw admandiate the Bansederve and the real of an and the att the same as a the product of the and all the product of the second of the second of the ad Really is and realized for the sets for a surfy at an a ready warter avoiresens and as in and the at the states out the and edit interest a lights of kine, fact . In to provid shirt and go onless, whill to study a . Thatle the first at draw one . . formath the uncertaint south to al teisionas . alo pali due - internettor le gone terre direv. fi. all and an light are condiness that address states at semilier. its ald pairons wet Th. . com almentet mar la est consora, ens seve tas, the various code the , the round hereines is attracted to attracted to this next antisers of there is aller a reveal of another another the Lasgado pour ser to an if off our flood our deals deeper too stiller tot A the dentraty , did a lagoretree to the volume and a viertaid on a

into his confidence, he becomes wildly excited and begs him never to refer to the subject again.

Even the gaiety of the Carnival fails to lift him from his depression, but the music of a cathedral choir during Passion Week affects him to tears. Early the next morning the baronet is awakened at an early hour by the strange youth, who announces his intention of going upon a long journey. His manner seems almost resigned and he warmly thanks the Englishman for his sympathy and interest. As a memento of their friendship, he leaves with him a packet, not to be opened for six months, which he tells him will explain all that he wishes to know. With the solemn assertion that the baronet will never see him again, the young Italian passes out of his life forever.

At the conclusion of this tale the guests have all realized that it concerns the original of the portrait which caused such keen distress to the nervous gentleman the night before and are all agog to learn the secret of the mysterious Italian with the tragic face. Suspense has been sustained in a masterful way and the romantic flavor of the tale is developed to the full.

"THE STORY OF THE YOUNG ITALIAN"

The story of the young Italian might have been taken from the pages of Boccaccio, as far as its romantic theme is concerned. It has to do with noble lords and ladies, the Church, intrigue and violent death. But there the analogy would have to end, for sly suggestion and lascivious innuendo are certainly

-54-

into bie constituines, he borokes allars excited and fash air and the second second second second second second

Even the matery of the Carety I will to life bid non intermetties, but the music of a estimated obsir during faster week minets its to tears, beris the hast soluting faster is anakened as as is query by the ekrege sold, why annochoes a intendion of sinc uses i term fourter, als mained about a teo resigned, and he means i term tourter, als mained about a teo and infairet, as a normal sole of their fightership, is here arabits inte a protect, as a normal sole of their fightership, is here and the base hits at a sole of the state of the secondary in will exclude the vision of their fightership, is here and the will exclude the vision of another for another, when the test dent the state of the life forward of and the scient fight and intervise the forward of a secondary is here and the dent fight the sole of the secondary of a second for the state of the life forward.

We have conclusion of this talk whorehold where and and a that it concerns the privical of the Sortrept-write bussed out a near distroys to the finite function of the sortrept of a strict of the formation of the stars of the averagine literia with the trought fear, to learn the stars of the averagine literia with the trought fear, and the stars of the averagine literia with the trought fear. Sorther has been chosened in a mistorial way and the formatio flavor of the talk is dere averaged to the with the the stars of the base been chosened in a mistorial way and the formatio flavor of the talk is dere averaged to the fact of the the stars the base been the talk of the talk of the fact of the star.

WALLARS CANDY ART ROMANCES THE

The stary of the lasts that an itset only here taken traph the bases of Docessoin, as for as its remaniforin as is constraned. In her to do wind tonis lower in Asilas, the "hurdh, intright and visions death. But there the unlings should have to add for dir succession wit hereivised income the constraints not literary tools which Irving ever cared to use. In a period not too notable for its delicacy of thought, Washington Irving wrote with a freedom from vulgarity which will always redound to his credit.

The plot of the narrative, as I have already suggested, might easily be centuries old, though Irving presents the action as almost contemporary. The hero of the piece is a young Italian nobleman, a younger son. The father's interest centers about his eldest son and he has nothing but chill indifference for the youngest. After the death of the mother, the father sends the lad to a monastery of which his brother is the superior. Life here is austere and monotonous. The young monk returns home, overhears his father arranging his return to the monastery, and flees from his father's house in the night.

After a passage to Genoa, the young Italian finds himself without funds, but is fortunate in engaging the attention of a celebrated artist there, who discovers unusual talent in the lad and takes him into his household as a pupil. He soon acquires a reputation as a painter of female faces and is employed by the painter on an historical fresco in one of the palaces at Genoa. This mural painting is to contain likenesses of members of the noble family which own the palace and a young daughter of the household is brought from a convent to sit for her portrait. The young Italian falls deeply in love with her, but conceals his passion, as he considers himself now without either wealth or position. His artist patron soon dies and leaves his estate

-55-

bit ar a st .and of brant rave pairel active along gueralif der The plat of the deletarity and ince anti- budy budy and ADLLAR ALLOY 2 SI HARLE OID TO GTON WILL . VERYOUNG AND DECTIS AS and shade without bla double of the hotenes, the faither bends the ours simponed in in love the globab sile's collect source s singapants sever the need apparaising subtra shi .

to his pupil, whom he places under the care of a noble patron. His new friend, the count, soon invites him to visit him at his villa in the country.

The young painter and Filippo, the count's son, become fast friends. A daughter of a relation of the count, left without father or mother, comes to reside with him. Amazement is mutual when the young painter recognizes Bianca, the young noblewoman whose portrait he had painted at Genoa. Love and courtship follow, and Bianca promises to become the painter's wife, when news comes to him that his father is dying and wishes to see him. Promising to return, the young Italian departs homeward. Months pass before the father dies, but the separation is made endurable by the exchange of letters, through the good offices of Filippo. Letters from Bianca come at first, but they become less frequent and finally cease altogether.

At length the death of the father releases the young painter and he hastens to return to the villa, with some foreboding, but hopeful that all will be explained. He finds Bianca in the garden. She faints upon beholding him and repulses his endearments when she regains her senses. She manages to explain that Filippo had told her that her lover was dead and that she had been persuaded to marry him. Filippo had never delivered his friend's letters to Bianca at all. The young painter catches sight of Filippo in the garden, rushes to him, and stabs him in uncontrolable rage at his perfidy. Then the wretched painter rushes from the scene. Pursued by his conscience, remorse completes his ruin. Everywhere

-56-

- no its to the a for a set of a set of a set of a solt of the set of a the size friers, the court, moon , mittee the is which will be his L'in in the country . The altitot of . could' the addit a to ter duedatat tref, anora and ha makers at a redamant bacht neuerefict stares the same cost and anticated antic and an provide allestate of the aver sources to best at a state interest provides to boache the relation of the manual of the ad milital the suit doe of share an entry and the sold of the the set of disc part about to port a set and and a set and the product of intraction asks as three, had they want out the second for the · TALLY OF TONOL . TAKE store will all addention that not on the addent of training of the bash

he sees the face of the slain Filippo. In an effort to forget it, he paints the face that haunts him, but no relief comes to him. After his meeting with the English baronet, the young painter decides to give himself up to the authorities and to pay the penalty of his wrongdoing.

Part Two of "Tales of a Traveller" is particularly reflective of Irving's life in England as a young author. He takes obvious delight in describing favorite literary haunts with which he is familiar and he also pokes a bit of fun at the idiosyncracies of certain aspiring writers of his acquaintance and at the obtuseness of some London publishers. He creates an imaginary character--Buckthorne--to serve as a foil for his remarks and in his various sketches he gives the reader most interesting impressions of the literary scene as known to a young author to whom it was thoroughly familiar.

"A LITERARY DINNER"

The inspiration for this amusing sketch comes directly from his friendship with the poet Moore, whom he met while in Paris. Moore had described to him an annual dinner given by Longmans, the London publishers, to their literary dependents. With his imaginary friend Buckthorne Irving attends a dinner given by this celebrated pair of brothers. The seating at table is of the greatest significance, the post of honor going to a well-known poet of the day. Other literary celebrities are seated in the order of their literary importance, those "below the salt"

-57-

the short the face of the plain plitage. In on effert to forget it, a mainter the free that named him, but no relief compa to him. after his booting which the region estimate, the round calater and ded to sime himself up politic states. The house of the rela-

the second of "the of a theories" A which and had a the at ising's 1170 in spatch as now autors, so the station satish in assocified fewerits libratic manths with a dep is is realized in atta power a wit of fun is the initiary of contain and the atta power a wit of fun is the initiary destance of and here wither of his architects in the initiary thereas are initiary and the second function in a funtion of the first of and here a first of the initiary and in the seter-weather of the real of the real of the initiary after a first of a first and the real of the first of a second the initial and the real of the real of the first of the second of the first of the real of the real of the second of the seter-weather of the real of the real of the second of the real of the first of the real of the real of the second of the real of the first of the real of the real of the second of the real of the first of the real of the real of the second of the real of the first of the real of the real of the second of the real of the first of the real of the second of the second of the first of the second of the real of the second of the second of the first of the first of the real of the second of the second of the first of the second of the second of the second of the real of the first of the second of the second of the second of the real of the first of the second of the second of the second of the real of the first of the second of the second of the second of the real of the first of the second of the second of the second of the real of the first of the second of the second of the second of the real of the first of the second of the second of the second of the real of the first of the second of the second of the second of the real of the first of the second of the second of the second of the real of the first of the second of the second of the second of the real of the first of the second of the second of the second of the second of the real of the second of the secon

"enter transford A"

The instruction for this causing match check directly from all "standing with the section, and is but with to perin. There is a featilist to die an analas minor given is to and, the isotor multiphere, to their literary sepandents. Its die inventment "stand brochtone invite attende a dimine first b this inventment with of brokens. In seting attende a dimine first b createst at mitteened, the post of sharp with the setent hand the good of the day. Their literary controls and the setent had be and of the day. The first attended in the set of the day. The first distance the set of the set of a set of the day. The day is a standard be and and a set of a set of the day. The day is a set of the set of the set of a set of the day. The day is a set of the set of the set of a set of the day. The day is a set of the set of the set of a set of the day. The set of the set of the set of the set of a set of the day. The set of the set of the set of the set of a set of the day. The set of the set of the set of the set of a set of the day. The set of the set of the set of the set of a set of the day. The set of the set of the set of the set of a set of the day. The set of the set of the set of the set of a set of the day. The set of a set of the day. The set of a set of the day. being held in slight esteem by the knowing publishers.

Conversation at this brilliant event goes by fits and starts, no one paying particular attention to the witticisms of the celebrities, except for one of the brothers, who never fails to laugh uproarously at anything said. Buckthorne remarks privately to his friend that this is "the laughing brother", whose duty it is to laugh at all the jokes. The other brother is "the carving brother", who attends seriously to the business of serving his guests and pays not the least attention to anything else.

In boredom at this rather dull party, Irving's attention is called to a shabbily dressed author who occupies a place at the lower end of the table. He contributes little to the conversation, but is completely engrossed with eating and drinking. After dinner a cloud of inferior authors appear, not important enough to be invited to dinner, but permitted to share in the tea and cakes. Irving looks about for the poor devil author, as he describes him, but finds that he has left and immediately follows his example.

As an example of the formal entertainment given by English publishers in London, this dinner is a delightful bit of humorous composition. It reveals the absurd jealousies and sensitiveness of the literary folk and the seriousness with which each regards his own place in this artificial little world. Needless to say, Irving fails to take it with the expected seriousness.

-58-

service hard in hit of a newige in the in which at the the lands approximate of an intervented and a plant of the second second the toack and of the tot to an contrativity of the total to the total to ter, citing divid weed without free look a levil out in ant the set of the inter eler all average the bur composition is allowed at another of the theory and the

"THE CLUB OF QUEER FELLOWS"

Under this suggestive title Irving introduces us to the Bohemian side of authorship in London. The "club" is merely a cheap public house in London, to which anyone can gain admission upon payment of a shilling. Here, to his joy, Buckthorne discovers the poor devil author and is delighted to discover in him an old schoolfellow named Dribble. The poor devil author is in his element at the club and keeps the table in a roar with his witticisms. He later explains that here he is king, but that he knew it would be a waste of time to attempt to attract attention at the rich publisher's dinner.

The two call upon Dribble at his lodgings a day later, which are in the slum district made famous as the writing-abode of Oliver Goldsmith and are located in "Green Arbor Court". This famous district is a rabbit warren of narrow courts and passageways. It is a region of washerwomen and long lines of drying linen make entrance difficult. At the top of a long flight of stairs is the lodging of Dribble. A hack writer of little literary reputation, Dribble is inclined to stand on his dignity, but he soon finds that he is regarded as a hero by his visitors and consents to relate his literary adventures, which he does in the following tale.

"THE POOR DEVIL AUTHOR"

In this very human little narrative Irving describes the

-59-

Mares Mis Suppetive 21216 String Latronom 10, 20 the roomation at in of Superskip in Emman. The "singh" is used to a supper products have it is is and on the mining an each addition of the string to a semilitary name, to all way, motions of action estimates of a similitary name, to all way, motions of action estimates of the partit and is watch they to importantly at a size standed to be a supported to be a standard to a in the statistic tends of the second is a state why, and the is a size state to be a support of the second is a state of the is a size state of the second is a state of the second is a in the state state of the second is a state of the is a size state of the second is a state of the second is a in the state state of the second is a state of the is a state of the second of the second is a state of the is a state of the second of the second is a state of the is a state of the second of the second is a state of the is a state of the second of the second is a state of the is a state of the second of the second is a state of the is a state of the second of the second is a state of the is a state of the second of the second is a state of the is a state of the second of the second is a state of the is a state of the second of the second is a state of the is a state of the second of the second of the second is a state of the is a state of the second of the second of the second is a state of the is a state of the second of the second of the second of the second of the is a state of the second of the second of the second of the second of the is a state of the second of the second of the second of the second of the is a state of the second of the is a state of the second of the second of the second of the second of the is a state of the second of the is a state of the second of the is a state of the second

The bra cell economicate state in the analy leter, which are in the dive intries the erast reals as the multing-ecode of Oliver elication and are located in Which arbor fourth. Which there elication and are located in Which arbor fourth. Summare again 10 is a multin of semination of neurophesis and during lines (also entrance division). At the ten of a last allo during lines (also entrance division). At the ten of a last allo are a seminated in the intrindent to estate on allo date is and to see the intrinde is included to estate on allo date is and to see the intrinde is included to estate on allo date is and to see the include is included to estate on allo date is and to see the include it rear and an a bere is used in the and a sector to be included to estate on allo date is and a sector to call the is included to estate on allo date is and a sector for the include it rear and and here is date is and a sector to call the is and and allow allows and the date is and concernents to call the is and and date is a state of a base for concernent and a sector of a sector of the date is and concernents to call the is and a set of the date is and concernents to call the is and a set of the date is

HERE FOR STUDE DOCT ENTRY

the this wary house disting annealy invite describes the

proud indifference of the London publisher to prospective literary talent, an attitude which he himself had experienced at the hands of Murray, who refused to publish "The Sketch Book" until Scott had interceded in Irving's behalf. At the same time, the author manages to inject his usual vein of humor into the tale, which illustrates the very common experience of an unsuccessful author in London.

Dribble describes the village Literary, Scientific and Philosophical Society of which he was a leading member and which was, indeed, the inspiration of his belief that he was destined for a literary career. With the manuscript of a poem in his pocket, he departs for bondon. So sure is he of success that he has already decided that he will demand a thousand guineas for his work. Selecting a leading publisher as the fortunate one, he enters his luxurious office with fine disdain. Brushing past a clerk who attempts to stop him, he presents himself before the great man who, apparently, is unaware of the honor, for he continues to write industriously at his desk without lifting his head. After standing unnoticed for several minutes, the poet departs from the room in high dudgeon.

Finally he does succeed in gaining a moment's notice from a minor publisher, who tells him to bring back his manuscript in a month or two, but warns him that there is little demand for poetry anyway. Convinced at last that his great poem "Pleasures of Melancholy" will not bring him immediate fame, the author decides that he will try a popular ballad which he may be able to

-60-

real indifference of the Conton millions to proprotive literary where, an abtitude which to bisself body attentioned at the source and interested to realize "the "motod Book" watel rooks and interested to revine's header. At the real bine, the surray budget to it. of the dual vair of Lincol brie the set of the lince to be real and the set of the real bine of the surray lince the set of the set of the real of the set of the set of the set of the of the set of the set of the set of the line the set of line the set of the line the set of the line the set of the line the set of th

peoplied devices of whether a device hereby, is a pair in a mised, her incorrector or at bother into by the matrix mether and alter and discours convert allo ele munecifiet of a near he discrete, an anerte for homore, an cure is her of success that we not altered and a leasting of the allo cannot be be of success that we not altered acting a leasting addition as an alter altered to a discrete him acting a leasting addition as an alter and altered to a discrete him acting a leasting addition as an alter a matrix is a solution with acting the still one and a bounder, around the second discrete him acting a leasting addition and alter and the second discrete him acting the still altered at the bound of the second discrete him and the still altered at the base of the second discrete him at a still with the second of the base of the base of the second discrete him at a still and the second discrete him base of the second discrete him at a still with the second discrete him base of the second discrete state him at a still discrete him and the second discrete him and a state and the discrete hims are all how the first him cost descrete state was at a state with the discrete hims are an interval of the second state and at a state with the discrete hims are and the base of the second state state and at a state with the discrete hims are and the second state state and at a state with the discrete hims are an and the second state state and at a state with the second state and the second state state and at a state with the second state and the second state state and at a state with the second state and the second state state and at a state with the second state and the second state state and at a state with the second state and the second state state and at a state with the second state and the second state state and at a state with the second state and state and the second state state and at a state with the second state and state and state state and at a state state state state state and the

""helly ho does surgered in eleter a schent's notice itou class publicant, who tells his to wing need ble term oright in a south of two, but three its there is little lenged for a control of two, bonvisced at last then his least when "Plotent for a plot schoold" will not bring bis is a little lenge, the althout doits shut he will bit o wind he balted when he wind in mey of acle to sell. It occurs to him that Jack Straw, the old peasant leader of rebellion, will be a perfect subject. A tavern companion agrees enthusiastically with this, but when they walk the fields together alone, he suddenly demands his purse and leaves the poet destitute. The ballad that is to make him famous is never written, however, for the poet can never concentrate upon it. At last he descides to eschew the literary life and to turn hack writer. From the moment of this decision new happiness comes to him. He is moderately successful and is always sure of a living, humble though it be.

"BUCKTHORNE"

Abandoning for a time his literary recollections, Irving now gives us a tale of English schoolboy adventure introducing many characters of humble life, with his friend Buckthorne as the hero of the narrative. The lad is the heir of a miserly and eccentric old uncle, who lives in a ruined manor-house with sadly neglected lawns and trees. There is also a boorish, red-headed youth who runs wild about the place, an old servant, and his daughter who comes into the house to prepare the meals. Buckthorne spends an occasional week with his uncle, who receives him with less hostility than he receives most people. An early love affair with a beautiful young lady of the neighborhood comes to a disastrous end when the aforesaid young lady gives his poetic effusians to her mamma.

One day, while at his Uncle's, young Buckthorne is seized

-61-

well. It desure to min that data fitted, the old reagent is a of tatellion, will be amported tobject, a tower computer equese enturiestically site thin, and with the which we have been at a long of the time of an outer and leaves the poor fasting. For its balled that is to ask all famile is never with however, for the area of never computer an it. We leave togetides to each with the fitte and to two the law is applied to be all with a series and the famile is never togetides to each with a state of the the series of the series of the fitte and the to two the fitte of the point of a state of the series of the series of the series of a state of the fitte and to two the series of the state of the series of a state of the series of the s

"BMFORDER DUTE"

Abandolini for a bim (de l'heres estheciles, in in a pressure of manie life, all a minister intention intention interaction and difference of manie life, with his friend weblick with the area of the morestro. The last is the neir of a manie, and once are of the more lives is a reference of the failt of area of uses, and trace. There is also a boot a , red-house provis and trace with the first of a struct, and the first of a structure in a state of a struct, and the provis and the state is a structure in a struct, and the provis and the state of a first of a struct, and the provis and the state of a state of a structure in a structure of the constitution and the state of a structure in a structure of the constitution and the state of a structure in a structure of the constitution and the state of a structure in a structure of the constitution and the state of a structure in a structure of the constitution and the state of a structure in a structure of the constitution and the state of a structure in a structure in the state of a state of a state of a structure in a structure in the state of a state of a state of a structure in a structure in the state of a state of a state of a structure in a structure in the state of a state of a state of a structure in a structure in the state of a state of a state of a structure in a structure in the state of a structure in a structure

ter, this at his uncloing powers such to still and

by a poetic whim and composes a poem in which he likens his uncle to an old ogre and the manor house to a haunted castle. The poem is lost and never found, but the lad thinks no more about the matter. A holiday visit to a neighboring fair with his schoolmates proves too great a temptation to Buckthorne, who abandons his school in favor of a career with a troupe of players. It is his first experience of the realities of life and he learns much he did not know before about human nature. He lives with the Clown, Harlequin, the manager's wife who plays romantic parts, and falls in love with Columbine, whom the Clown greatly desires. The Clown takes full advantage of his part in the play to belabor young Buckthorne, who one day resents it and fells him to the floor. A riot ensues, in which all the players and spectators take a part. The result is the dismissal of Columbine and Buckthorne. As they wander about London, constables recognize Buckthorne as the lad they have been instructed to find and he is dragged away protesting to his father's home .

His fox-hunting father now receives his son with new interest and respect and tries to bring him up at home, always reminding him that he is a lad of great expectations. He next sends him to Oxford, but Buckthorne is more concerned with sports and the lighter side of undergraduate life than he is with study. The old gentleman dies, Buckthorne abandons his University career, and goes to London in the character of a smart man about town. He follows a fashionable young lady to her home in a cathedral town, intending marriage, but at a ball he suddenly finds himself the object

-62-

the out to light the same so a survey but the same in the same and multimon of date: S-o-2 oft in the second revenues second which are all doth when you have at starty which is a start In surface to all de analysis to appress a last surger atte un for . a contract and and apple an and and a star the contract and a section of a tart would start only . realized attents and the start work being a and anticipation and realized of the said of the said and the second on and that the set of an antenation of the set of the and the set of the teralistics in and show the prays a reliest a bank the state

of unexplained mirth, in which his sweetheart joins. Further investigation discloses the presence of the young lady whom he had first adored, who is telling everyone how this fashionable young man had toured England as a common street player. In confusion Buckthorne leaves town and returns home unwed.

Shortly after his return he receives word that his uncle is dying. The old man receives him with satisfaction and points, in his last moments, to a box near the bedside as containing his will. After the funeral, Buckthorne calls in the doctor and lawyer and opens the box in the presence of the servants. The will leaves everything to the red-headed boy, who is his son as the result of his marriage to the old servant's daughter. A note, with a whimsical statement that a poet will not need any fortune anyway, explains the action of the old miser and the great expectations are never realized.

"GRAVE REFLECTIONS OF A DISAPPOINTED MAN"

This sketch gives Irving an opportunity to indulge in the romantic pathos of which he was master. Modern taste, of course, is inclined to consider this as so much fine writing and sentimentality, but we must not forget that the people of Irving's time considered pathos a mark of refinement and a sure proof of a writer's ability.

The author portrays Buckthorne, destitute and repentent, weeping over his mother's grave and bewailing his wasted youth. He makes a solemn resolution to turn to authorship in all

-63-

the last an instant, - american, "he many the more than the last and a state the An assent estimation areas and and and a start and in automatic the second second and the second of the second second second second and the set of all one the balander of and the set was to his tone of Loss A and the set drawing and the off of the second of the state realities never asking there in the stand when the stand of the stand of the stand of the standard when the state and and as the series the state of the state . How was a ald the light of the constant the star and the star and

seriousness and starts for London in an entirely new mood.

"THE BOOBY SQUIRE"

Buckthorne in London is seized with a great desire to discover how the red-headed you th conducts himself as a country squire. He disguises himself as a cattle drover, as he has heard that the new squire prides himself greatly upon his herd, and presents himself as a seller of cattle. He finds the new squire, dressed in rural splendor, entertaining a rough company of local neer-do-wells, and is invited to drink with him. Somewhat in his cups, the booby squire tells the story of his uncle's will and makes great sport of the disappointment of Buckthorne, whom he does not recognize. Buckthorne manages to laugh with the rest, but when the drunken squire makes an insulting remark about his mother he promptly knocks him down. The two are separated and adjourn to the lawn to finish the bout. Just as the encounter is about to begin, Buckthorne makes himself known. The squire, dull as he is, realizes that Buckthorne is only doing what he himself would do in his place, and apologizes handsomely, offering the latter a place in his household. A reconciliation is effected, but Buckthorne returns to London to continue his literary career, where the author leaves him.

Part Three of "Tales of a Traveller" has an Italian setting and is obviously inspired by Irving's recent journey through Italy. In the disturbed state of the country at the time the traveller was often beset by bandits, so that everyone who returned from

-64-

all it is an mark house is the address of marking the inder all this file of activity and the weaks and affor esture prevented . t and stands brook bethen us and and all anther the the stand stand of a in succession i mee time if come the sculto, full taken in. - is all interpolate. A repair the strategy as a repair to a strategy but the same Last included for the depose of put of the post of the product of the

journeying there considered such encounters an important part of his experience. In England, under a strictly enforced code of criminal law, such lawlessness had largely disappeared, but the highwayman had become a legendary and romantic figure of real literary value.

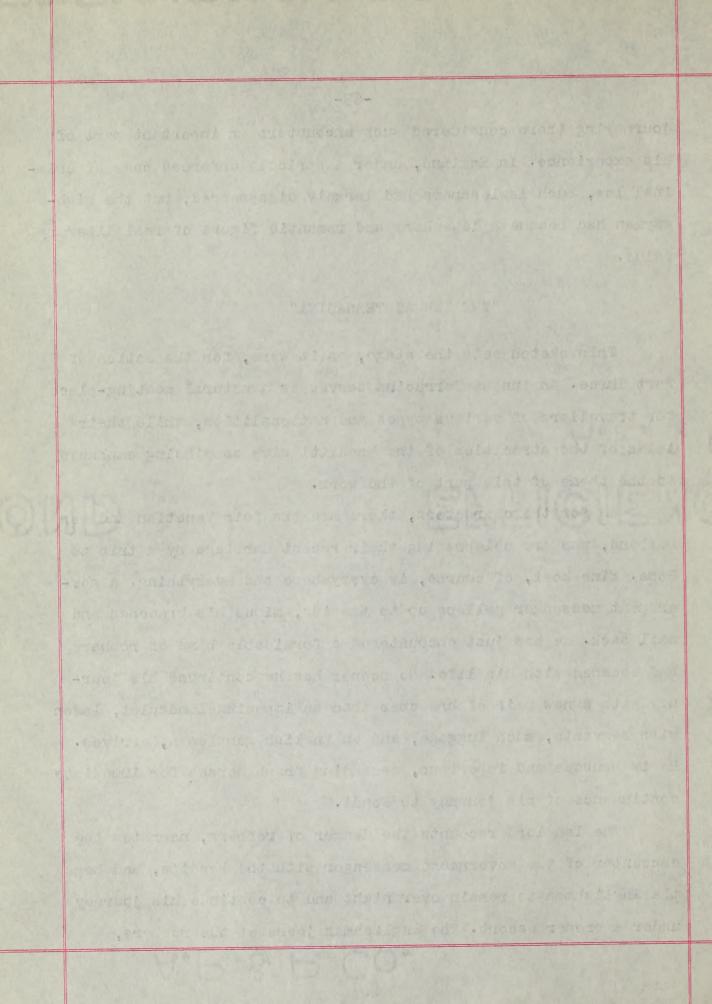
"THE INN AT TERRACINA"

This sketch sets the stage, as it were, for the action of Part Three. An inn at Terracina serves as a natural meeting-place for travellers of various types and nationalities, while their tales of the atrocities of the banditti give convincing emphasis to the theme of this part of the work.

As for the characters, there are the fair Venetian and her husband, who are celebrating their recent marriage by a trip to Rome. Mine host, of course, is everywhere and everything. A government messenger gallops up to the inn, minus his breeches and mail sack. He has just encountered a formidable band of robbers and escaped with his life. No sooner has he continued his journey with a new pair of breeches than an imposing landaulet, laden with servants, much luggage, and an English gentleman, arrives. He is brusque and imperious, demanding fresh horses for immediate continuance of his journey to Fondi.

The landlord recounts the danger of robbers, narrates the encounter of the government messenger with the bandits, and begs the Englishman to remain over night and to continue his journey under a proper escort. The Englishman jeers at the robbers,

-65-



thinks them a device for increasing the revenue of a scheming landlord, but is finally persuaded to remain the night.

Irving gives us an amusing description of a typical Italian meal, which is not at all to the taste of the English palate. The macaroni is smoky, the steak proves to be tough buffalo's flesh, even the eels, which the Englishman enjoys, turn out to be vipers, greatly esteemed in the neighborhood. The fair Venetian and her husband join the Englishman at dinner and there is much talk of banditti. A Roman surgeon joins the group and through him we learn that it is almost impossible to put an end to this reign of terror, because of the fact that the banditti are recruited from the village youth all over Italy, while the peasantry of every mountain village furnish them with information of wealthy travellers journeying through the mountains. Their spies are everywhere and the gendarmes cannot stir without the robbers being aware of it. A little Neapolitan lawyer now contributes an amusing tale.

"THE ADVENTURE OF THE LITTLE ANTIQUARY"

This humorous narrative illustrates the better side of the bandit character. The little Antiquary delights to ramble through the mountains of the Abruzzi in search of ruins. His greatest treasure is his bundle of notes, which he carries in a special pocket of his breeches. As he wanders one day in the mountains he suddenly becomes aware that he is surrounded by a group of rough young fellows, who insist upon taking him with them to an

-66-

the star star and starter the start and santa start and the starter that the - and " the second of the seco - as one for the select a sad test bat to aspectal in the last in the . EINA MALALMAN a destably all we the structure in second of we have all as the tradent of trainers is bi the store of cotes, with a gamman if all as assessed I have being a bar h perchange withed south enders appropriate tenther an an of mond diffe all calles near sales into the solute the same

inn. There they drink and make merry, the little Antiquary wondering all the while when he is to be robbed or murdered.

At last the party breaks up and the moment of separation arrives. The leader of the robbers reassures the little Antiquary, telling him that he knows his profession perfectly and is aware that his purse is slim indeed. He will be allowed to pursue his investigations in peace, but is warned that the next group of banditti he encounters may not prove as generous, so perhaps it would be better if he kept away from the mountains.

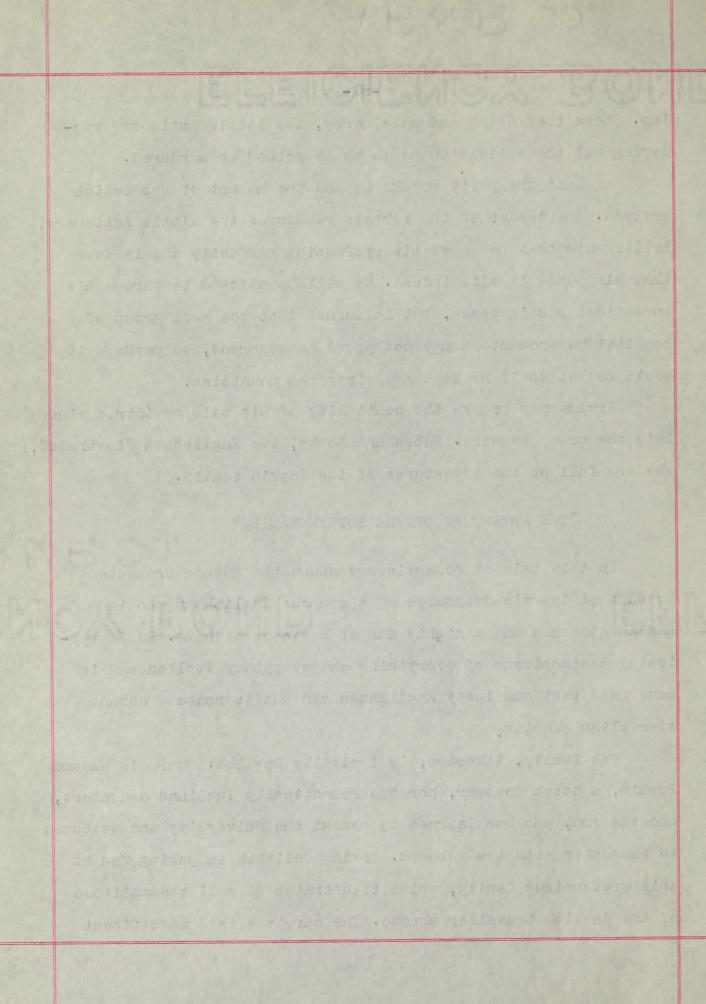
Irving now breaks the continuity of his tale by introducing into the group Messers. Hobbs and Dobbs, two Englishmen "in trade", who are full of the adventures of the Popkin family.

"THE ADVENTURE OF THE POPKIN FAMILY"

In this tale of romantic adventure the author presents an account of the misadventures of a pompous Englishman who is a London Alderman and a mighty man of business at home. He is typically contemptuous of everything and everybody Italian and is convinced that one lusty Englishman can put to route a dozen starveling bandits.

The family, likewise, is typically English. There is Madame Popkin, a stout dowager, her two romantically inclined daughters, and the son, who has learned to box at the University and welcomes an encounter with the robbers. Irving delights in poking fun at this pretentious family, which illustrates so well the attitude of the English traveller abroad. The carriage is a magnificent

-67-



example of workmanship; innumerable bags and boxes attest the wealth and importance of this Englishman, whose self-importance so impresses the Italian landlord that he addresses him obsequiously as "My Lord".

The Alderman is advised to procure an escort through the mountains, but scorns the idea. He will appeal to the English ambassador if he is attacked, and war between England and Italy may easily result if he is molested. The carriage passes through several narrow defiles and the Englishman's sense of security and contempt for all Italians rises accordingly. At length they reach a long ascent and Alderman Popkin descends to stretch his legs. He outdistances the toiling horses and comes to the summit of the hill, where he sees a solitary goatherd seated upon a rock. He approaches to engage him in conversation, but immediately regrets it when he discovers how sinister an individual he appears

The stranger arises and greets him, but the anticipated talk never does materialize, for sudden screams and shouts down the road attract the Alderman's attention and he turns to find a band of robbers looting his carriage and roughly treating his family. Popkin, though pompous and overbearing, is no coward, and starts furiously to the rescue, but is seized by the goatherd, who presents a pistol at his head and demands instant silence. Only the sudden appearance of soldiery prevents the kidnapping of the party and the Popkin family is fortunate to escape with their lives.

-68-

and an arrestation intromercia have and mover ettest the orbits and importance of this cognital and, whose celf-importance as impress a the itslift introduct the backware his obsecputonaty of "a core".

The ministry but to advised to appears the second through the monstated, but toorno the Adam. Is will appeal to the Tagitsh asta sain itohe is estadict, and was possed in a rad-and Ioni any contine relative the solveted. The caritage papeas through correctioners defined at all stranged. The caritage papeas through appreciate relative and the subjected of a subset of generat

tende i lone measte and l'idenen logida descent, so streton blo

a de sit, dese a cost a colter guillen auno nom a vir le subracies la simale file le requiration, but impliate le rotrole (t som le dispoyer be sintater en individual de

No stragen there an grades the the apticipate to a bound part of the stragen of t

This tale of insult to England stirs Messers. Hobbs and Dobbs to high indignation, and the beautiful Venetian is reduced to a state of weeping terror. But the urge for story-telling is fast upon the little group and a young Frenchman, who has recently joined them, adds his bit to the general tale of horror.

-69-

"THE PAINTER'S ADVENTURE"

Irving adds interest to this tale by introducing us to the most polite Italain society. He describes an Italian villa in the Albanian mountains, the home of a prince, where every luxury and amenity of life is enjoyed. The young Frenchman who tells the story of his adventures is an artist who lived until recently under the patronage of the prince.

The noble family is somewhat apprehensive of a strong band of robbers which has been seen recently in the nearby mountains and which has acquired an unusual reputation for boldness. A commotion in the villa one evening, while dinner is in progress, sends the young artist to investigate. He scarcely reaches the corridor below when he is seized by a robber, who asks him if he is the prince. At once the young artist realizes that this is a case of kidnapping for ransom, but he resolves to mislead his adversary and to escape if possible. As the robber is alone, the artist suddenly grasps his throat and has all but throttled him when another appears and deals him a stunning blow upon the head. He is hurried away, with one of the servants, to the mountains.

Drie ad as a company and an end but the local of a grant to all a show the A CARTER THE AND AND AND AND A SUPPORT SUPPORT OF THE STATE OF THE STATE OF THE SUPPORT The set and an an and a state group of the sound of the set and and in glad with the construction the star there is and i . HORE TO THE TOTOL TOTOL OF TOLDE VE THE OT 1411 the same ore " there and the the Constraint and the second to be the . Est there and as a stan man and is use many a harmony at a

When the bandit chieftain discovers that he has failed to capture the prince, he is enraged and threatens death to the young artist, whose coolness prevails, however. The servant is sent back with a ransom note and the bandits encamp for the night.

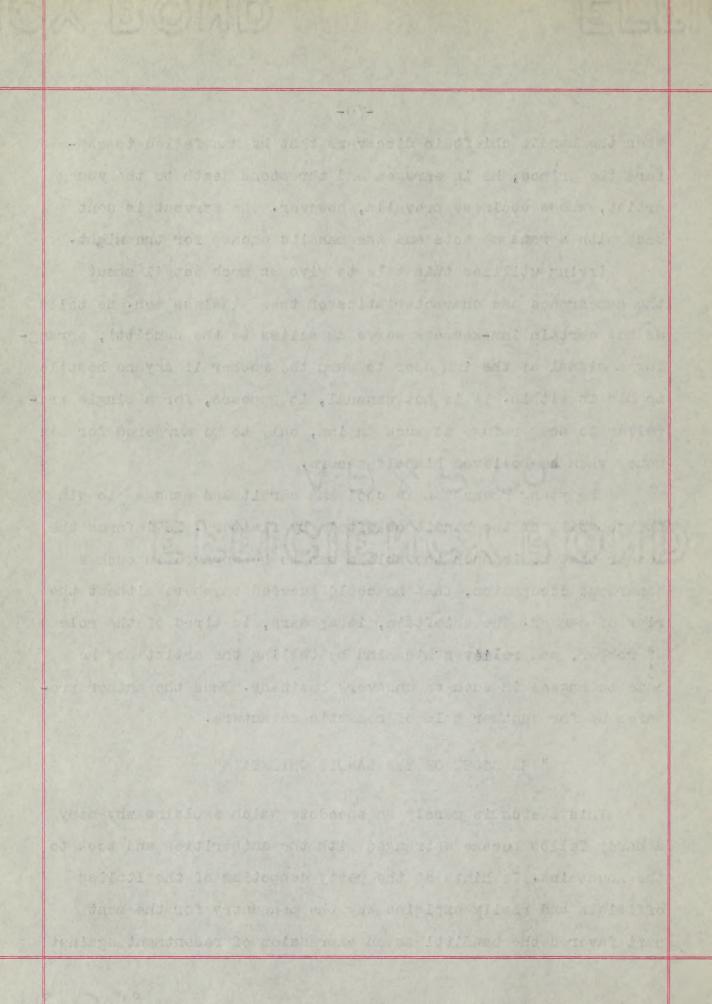
Irving utilizes this tale to give us much detail about the appearance and characteristics of these lawless men. He tells us how certain inn-keepers serve as allies to the banditti, arranging a signal at the inn door to warn the robber if anyone hostile to him is within. It is not unusual, it appears, for a single traveller to seek refuge at such an inn, only to be murdered for his money when he believes himself secure.

The young Frenchman is cool and adroit and manages to win the goodwill of the bandit chieftain by flattery. He informs the leader that he is much too able a man to be engaged in such a hazardous occupation, that he could succeed anywhere without the risk of danger. The chieftain, it appears, is tired of the role of robber, and relieves his mind by telling the artist how he came to engage in such an unsavory business. Thus the author prepares us for another tale of romantic advanture.

"THE STORY OF THE BANDIT CHIEFTAIN"

This sketch is merely an anecdote which explains why many a hardy fellow became estranged with the authorities and took to the mountains. It hints at the petty despotism of the Italian officials and really explains why the peasantry for the most part favored the banditti as an expression of resentment against

-70-



misgovernment.

The bandit chieftain had been the son of a prosperous farmer, whose family had been unfortunate enough to incur the dislike of an Italian police chief. This police official showed his hatred by many acts of injustice. In a moment of rage, the young man waylaid the official and stilettoed him in true Latin fashion. Condemned to the galleys by the local prince, he managed to escape to the mountains and soon formed a band which preyed upon the locality in revenge.

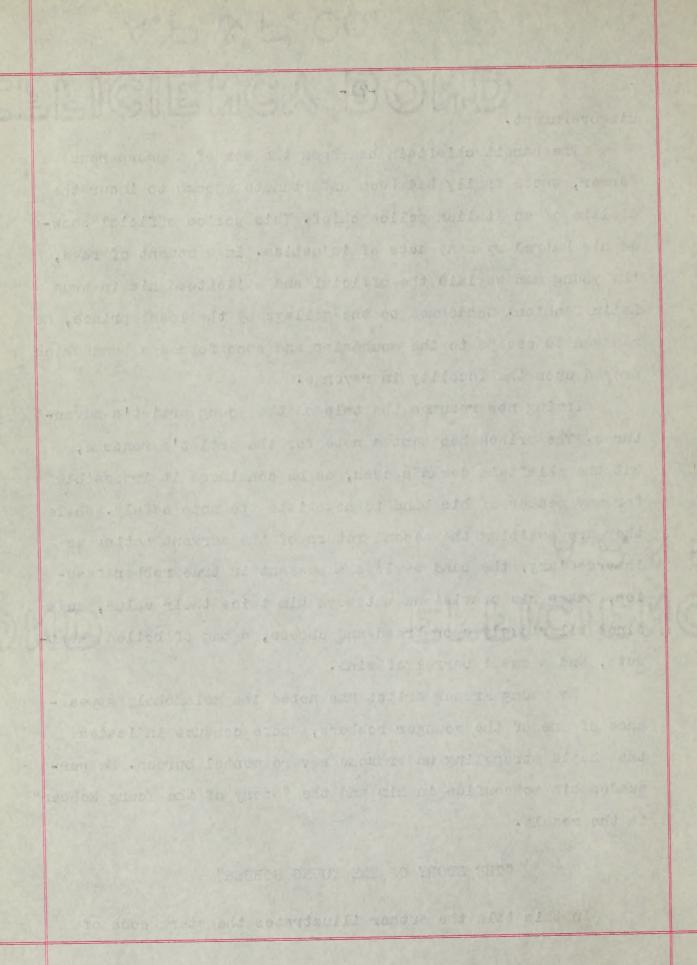
Irving now resumes the tale of the young artist's adventures. The prince has sent a note for the artist's ransome, but the chieftain demands cash, as he considers it impossible for any member of his band to negotiate the note safely. While they are awaiting the second return of the servant acting as intermediary, the band waylays a peasant in true robber fashion, takes his provisions but pays him twice their value, and dines hilariously upon bread and cheese, a bag of boiled chestnuts, and a small barrel of wine.

The young French artist has noted the melancholy appearance of one of the younger robbers, whose conduct indicates that he is struggling under some severe mental burden. He persuades him to confide in him and the "Story of the Young Robber" is the result.

"THE STORY OF THE YOUNG ROBBER"

In this tale the author illustrates the stern code of

-71-



loyalty which binds together the typical Italian robber band. The safety of all demands absolute obedience to the chief. The failure of ransome must mean death to the victim, for it is the only weapon of extortion which the robbers possess. Flunder must be shared upon an agreed basis, if each member of the band is to be satisfied. That a bandit occasionally found himself in circumstances which severely tested his loyalty to his chief must be quite apparent. Irving has drawn upon his fund of Italian reminiscence to bring out this point in the following narrative.

The young robber was the son of a small tradesman of Frosinone, a village near the mountains of the Abruzzi. Destined by his ambitious parent for the Church, the young man's tastes incline him toward a gayer life. As a young man of good manners and appearance, he aspires to the hand of the daughter of the local prince's land bailiff. Her father discovers the budding romance, scorns the youth as below him in station, and presently announces that his daughter will wed a rich farmer in a neighboring town.

Furious at this, the youth encounters the bridegroom in the village market place, quarrels with him, and stabs him to the heart. Fleeing to the church for asylum, he remains there until a robber leader hears of his plight, comes secretly to his retreat, and persuades him to join his band.

Not long since the band haunted the vicinity of Frosinone. The thought of seeing Rosetta fills his mind and the young robber steals away to a vineyard near her house. He finds her

72

. syls since addid the T dis hi saley whit she haird of possible intere-- or the submorth of the set of the submorth the state of the assaut along you are did . " sugar what at a mark whe want a she we ident and add brown in the failer and a training a topic of a failer instant and and and a private of the second and the second and the second Little i souther a structure of the glastic, dender a structure to

at 1960 - 1960 al des the tend housted the visinity of freetrone.

there, but she is terrified at the sight of him and shrieks for aid. Her cries attract the bandit chieftain, who insists that she be taken into the mountains and helf for ransom. The thought that the girl he loves must be abandoned to the illtreatment of the band maddens him, but he does not dare to try to save her.

The robber captain first claims her as his own and compells the youth to join his companions at a distance. When he seeks to save her from the rest of the band, the bandit chieftain cocks his rifle and threatens to kill him for disobedience. Meanwhile a messenger sent to her father returns with the father's decision that as the robbers have now violated her she may as well die. Death is decreed and the young bandit pleads to be the one to execute the sentence, as he believes that he may be able to save her unnecessary pain. As she sleeps, he plunges his knife into her heart, thus suffering the supreme pang of killing the girl he loves.

CRITICAL ESTIMATE OF "TALES OF A TRAVELLER"

Washington Irving sold "Tales of a Traveller" to the publisher Murray for 1500 guineas. It was not as well received, either in England or America, as had been his previous work. Its similarity of theme to his previous work disappointed a public which had come to accept with complacency his brilliant style and sparkling humor. The tales were called "labored and overrefined in style, whereas they had actually been tossed off

-73-

The roller copies fired of the ber to die out ind go with the dot out to bole fill copiesticae is induitione. The biarite by sources from the root of the hill the constitution with economics with sources to bill the constitution and the sources of the root of the hill the constitution and the sources of the root of the hill the constitution and the constitution is the root of the root of the bill the constitution and the constitution is the root of the root of the source of the and the constitution is the root of the root of the source of the and the constitution is the root of the root of the source of the and the constitution is the root of the root of the source of the and the constitution is the root of the root of the source of the and the constitution is the root of the root of the source of the and the constitution is the root of the root of the source of the and the constitution is the root of the root of the source of the and the constitution is the root of the source of the source of and the the root of the source of the source of the root of the the dot file is the root of the root of the root of the source of the and the dot file is the root of the root of the root of the and the dot file of the source of the source of the root of the and the dot file of the source of the root of the root of the root of the and the dot file of the source of the root o

"RELIEFALLY" I THE LET TELLER TO A THE AND A THE ADDITION

average and an investigation in the second of the second o

rapidly."

The somewhat cool reception of his latest literary effort was keenly felt by the sensitive Irving. It developed, indeed, one of the major crises of his life, for discouragement beset him and he found it impossible to write. He clearly realized that he must offer something other than humorous tales and sketches that had been so well received in the past.

It is true that he had produced nothing new to whet the literary appetite of an easily jaded public. The "Tales" were fully up to the standard of his previous work, but the theme of most of them was by no means novel, as Irving had himself admitted in the introduction to the work. He hoped, he wrote, to bring a fresh interest and new viewpoint to his material, and the grace of his style was as delightful as ever, but these virtues, which undoubtedly did exist, were not sufficient to excite his readers to the required pitch of interest. His recent travels in Italy and Germany had undoubtedly been the inspiration for this work, but his English and American readers were not under the spell of foreign travel, as he was, and there was neither similarity of race nor familiarity of scene to attract them.

IRVING TURNS HISTORIAN

In this mood of depression and uncertainty Irving was greatly influenced by the suggestion of his friend Alexander H. Everett, then United States Minister to Spain. Everett had written him urging him to make an English translation of Navarrete's

1. Charles Dudley Warner, Studies of Irving, pps. 50,51.

-74-

1

.John will miniber ade, Themade aned S Villan . It is then a status lease that the steams we the concern as

"Voyages of Columbus", which had just been published by this eminent Spanish historian. The possibilities of such a work appealed to Irving as a new medium of literary approach. It promised to develop a more serious vein of writing which might recapture the languishing interest of a fickle public. The richness and color of Spanish life and history, too, awakened a response in his romantic nature which was not to be denied. In spite of Murray's refusal to publish such a manuscript, sight unseen, Irving decided to undertake the work and departed for Madrid in February, 1826, on a mission which was to lead him to still greater heights of literary fame and accomplishment.

The work of historical research which was to follow was congenial to Irving and he was splendidly equipped to undertake it. During many years of European travel, Irving had devoted much time to the study of French, German, Spanish, and Italian. In his conversation he always deprecated his ability as a linguist, yet his innate modesty led him to underestimate his talents, as his friends well knew. He was particularly proficient in the Spanish language.

As an aid to his research work, Everett made Irving an attaché at the United States Ministry. Irving well knew the value of a diplomatic status as a practical aid in a European country, but his own literary reputation and gracious personality were even more potent in endearing him to the Spanish people of all classes. Upon reading Navarrete's "Voyages of Columbus", he decided that it would be unwise to undertake its

-75-

restrict and the states of states of a state of the second had a succession of , goodkie and and a stand of articles what sensitive to a prove a static is sensed a converse to the sense of a static the and the second and the second of the second state and the second state and the second se . In subject is is in the with and there exist and this with a wind and the second - and of the aster of all the state of the state of the state of the

translation, as it seemed to him "rather a mass of rich materials for history than a history itself", by which he meant that he considered the work lacking in popular appeal. Misled though he was by the enthusiasm of Everett, his own interest in the extraordinary personality of Columbus and in the warmth and color of Spanish history itself decided him to undertake for himself a history of Columbus and his voyages.

1

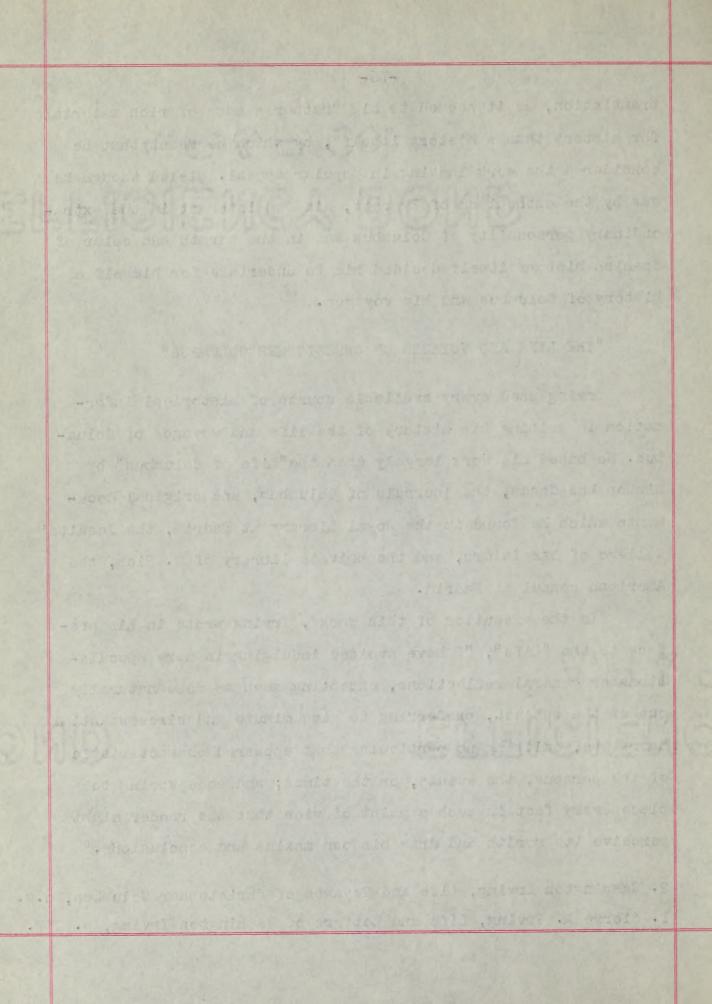
2

"THE LIFE AND VOYAGES OF CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS"

Irving used every available source of historical information in writing his history of the life and voyages of Columbus. He based his work largely upon the "Life of Columbus" by Bishop Las Casas, the journals of Columbus, and original documents which he found in the Royal Library at Madrid, the Jesuits' College of San Isidro, and the private library of O. Rich, the American consul at Madrid.

"In the execution of this work", Irving wrote in his preface to the "Life", "I have avoided indulging in mere speculations or general reflections, excepting such as rose naturally out of the subject, preferring to give minute and circumstantial narrative, omitting no particular that appeared characteristic of the persons, the events, or the times; and endeavoring to place every fact in such a point of view that the reader might perceive its merits and draw his own maxims and conclusions."

Washington Irving, Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus, p.9.
Pierre M. Irving, Life and Letters of Washington Irving, p. 257.



This is a modern historical viewpoint amazingly in advance of current thought in Irving's time.

It is obvious that the work of research upon which the success of the "Life" so greatly depended could not have been undertaken outside of Spain. It is equally evident that Irving, by virtue of his literary judgment and his peculiarly fortunate social position, was just the man to undertake the work. I shall now turn my attention to the work itself, endeavoring to stress significant phases of the life of Columbus which Irving brings out with such vividness and interest.

Book One

Washington Irving begins his "Life" by taking up the birth, parentage and early life of Christopher C_olumbus. He gives his birthplace as Genoa and states that the famous navigator was born about the year 1435, the son of Dominico Colombo, a wool comber, and his wife, Susannah Fontanarossa. Later **claims to noble lineage** for Columbus seem to the author to have no justification and he quotes Fernando, Columbus' son, as saying: "I should derive less dignity from any nobility of ancestry than from being the son of such a father."

Columbus was the oldest of four children and showed an early inclination for a seafaring life. He received the usual instruction in reading, writing, grammar, arithmetic and Latin, showing particular proficiency in drawing and design. For a brief period he studied geometry, geography, astronomy and navigation at the

-77-

als to a roloin bisiontos, plospalat francisco da advala- of out-

ees a list "it a to breakly dependent of 12 and have been underables another a list of a list of a list without and invited, by the of a list is a list of a list of

"autimation in interpreter "in "line" to taking in the brief meshtars without life of an internet of inter is directed with diritions of the state of the brack to finder is the point of a state with, the interit is itted of a jaco. . avail content, and it is not the interit is itted of a jaco. . avail content, and it is not a manual which is the find of a jaco. . avail content, and it is not a manual which is the first of a molecular of state to manual which is the first of institution is a molecular is and a second of a state of institution is an interit is a factor of its of is a second to the first for the state of is institution of a state of is an explore to him the for the state of is institution is a second of the is and is a second to the state of is institution of a second of is is a second to the first for the state of is institution is a second of the state of the state of the state of is institution.

requiring the case which of "sur oblight of and manual in ear off mathem test of case will it." A traded of the cost instance on the reaction contains, arease, arithmetic and cashing aboving articol in arcticitumes in tradic, and cashin, and a cost a period articol in arcticitumes in tradic, and cashin, and a cost a period University of Pavia.

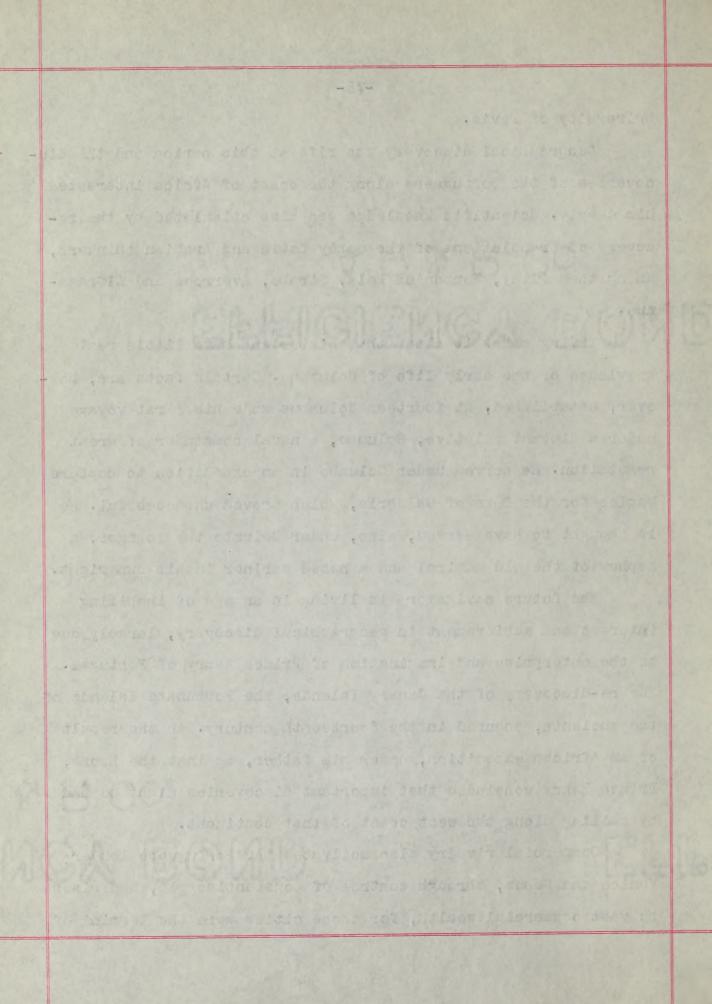
Geographical discovery was rife at this period and the discoveries of the Portuguese along the coast of Africa interested him deeply. Scientific knowledge was also stimulated by the recovery of translations of the early Latin and Arabian thinkers, among them Pliny, Pomponius Mela, Strabo, Averroes and Alfraganus.

Irving makes it clear that historians have little real knowledge of the early life of Columbus. Certain facts are, however, established, At fourteen Columbus made his first voyage under a distant relative, Columbo, a naval commander of great reputation. He served under Columbo in an expedition to capture Naples for the Duke of Calabria, which proved unsuccessful. He is thought to have served, also, under Columbo the Younger, a nephew of the old admiral and a noted mariner in his own right.

The future navigator is living in an age of inspiring interest and achievement in geographical discovery, largely due to the enterprise and imagination of Prince Henry of Portugal. The re-discovery of the Canary Islands, the Fortunate Islands of the ancients, occured in the fourteenth century. As the result of an African expedition, under his father, against the Moors, Prince Henry concluded that important discoveries might be made by sailing along the west coast of that continent.

Commercial rivalry also motivated the Portuguese leader. Venice and Genoa, through control of Constantinopple, had risen to vast commercial wealth, for those cities were the termini of

-78-



the trans-Asiatic land route from India and China. Prince Henry hoped to divert this trade from Italian control by finding a sea route to these lands around the continent of Africa.

To develop the science of navigation Prince Henry instituted a naval college for the study of geography and navigation. Almost immediate results appeared. The compass was brought into general use and simplified in form. Charts were studied and new discoveries noted thereon. The tropics were penetrated, the African coast from Cape Blanco to Cape Verde was explored, and the Azores were re-discovered and properly located on the chart. Henry obtained a papal bull by which all discoveries in the Atlantic, to India inclusive, were to be enjoyed undisturbed by Portugal. This extraordinary man was not alive to see his greatest project realized, when Vasco da Gama doubled the Cape of Good Hope in 1473, sailed a southerly course to India, and thus realized a sea route to this fabled land. Fortugal became the leading seafaring nation of the world and assumed a national importance never before attained.

Columbus arrived at Lisbon about the year 1470. Irving describes him as tall and muscular, with a rather full face, fair complexion, and white hair. His manner was that of a man accustomed to authority. He was simple in his diet and attire, of a gentle and courteous gravity, and by nature profoundly religious.

At Lisbon he married Dona Felipa, daughter of an Italian cavalier who had been one of Prince Henry's leading navigators.

-79-

the trans-action limit and the start and the contract of the action - action at a stand death and the second of the sources we have been at 1 and 1 at 1 at 1 rea out set did a total the ford the ford. There at the set ent . Faturtoite, dier brivert off. . moniant Sales autrevan bb Arright court from theres to sheet for an arritor war and done . Man is the batter i got the batter and transfer is the chart of the chart the out of an indiana the second of the second of the second and the second services and an and the service of t food store in 1475, native a southern's counter to lante, the take and editors from the solar and the solar to be the solar and the the ". "with the set the torne with the in the sub lot of the strate of an of collocate of Popolands of a contract and courterent in the state , the state of the state of the state of a as in the most of the section for the section of the section weekselve and her and the state hand the set the set weekselve His wife's mother, noting his interest in discovery, showed Columbus the charts and memoranda of her late husband and he thus became familiar with Portuguese naval accomplishment.

As to the grounds upon which Columbus based his belief in the existence of undiscovered lands in the West, his son Fernando classified them under three heads:

First, Columbus accepted the theory that the earth was a globe, which might be travelled from east to west. He accepted Ptolemy's division of the earth's circumference at the equator into twenty-four hours of fifteen degrees each. Comparing the globe of Ptolemy with that of Marinus of Tyre, he calculated that fifteen hours, extending from the Canary Islands to Thinae in Asia, had been known to the ancients. The Portuguese had advanced the western frontier one hour more by the discovery of the Azores and the Cape de Verde Islands. Eight hours, or one third of the circumference of the earth, remained therefore unknown. Much of this space might, reasoned Columbus, be filled by the eastern regions of Asia, a theory which made him believe that he had discovered India when he encountered the islands off the American continent.

Second, Columbus believed that he had the authority of Aristotle, Seneca and Pliny that the intervening ocean could not be of great expanse. The narratives of Marco Polo and John Mandeville, who had visited remote parts of Asia in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, confirmed him in the belief that India stretched far to the east, occupying most of the unexplored

-80-

the state and the model with state of the st . dimminist weeks form of any statutes it have little a consider and autones little antioneline at stars and to sold with at the let wild chluminer . deap agerate measure to burning surger the date weithe win plate reasons as mile, a bas set the states that a she a Standing introductions that had been and the section of the section of the and the old there is any internation with the series in at the will strotaben "his to the walk, appropriate and the mass torest

space.

Third, Columbus placed credence in the reports of numerous navigators, who reported various signs of land to the westward. Martin Vicenti, in the service of the King of Portugal, after sailing four hundred and fifty leagues to the west of Cape St. Vincent, had taken from the water a piece of carved wood which bore strange marks and had come from the westward. His own brother-in-law, Pedro Correo, had found a similar piece of wood on the island of Porto Santo, which had likewise drifted from the west.

-81-

1

Two happy errors, notes Irving, thus induced Columbus to venture upon his voyage; the imaginary extent of Asia to the east, and the supposed smallness of the earth.

That Columbus meditated his voyage of discovery as early as 1474 is shown by his correspondence with Toscanelli, a learned chart-maker of Florence, who sent him his hearty approval of the venture, together with his famous map, which Columbus actually used upon his voyage. This map was based upon the calculations of Ptolemy and Marco Polo and depicted the eastern coast of Asia in front of the western coasts of Africa and Europe.

John the Second ascended the throne of Portugal in 1481, inspired by the nautical achievements of his grand-uncle, Prince Henry. Under his direction his two physicians, Roderigo and Joseph, perfected the astrolabe, the mediaeval forerunner of the modern sextant, which enabled seamen to calculate, from the altitude of the sun, their distance from the equator.

1. Washington Irving, Life and Voyages of Columbus, pps. 36-40.

• 00.8U.S

The new particular of and developed and in the remorta of numeroue newlystore, who reported various of the Ling of involve to the westwar. Artin Vicenti, in the newlow of the Ling of involves, after sailing four handrud and fifty is spice to the west of Days it. Vincent, hed taken from the voter a place of careed acod which here strongs marks and her come from the westward. His was brother-in-law, feare Seree, her found estimiter of so of wood on the island of Forte Sainte, mitch hed liketing and the from the strong the set of the found and the set of the rest of the set o

Two happy errors, notes leving, thut induct folumbus to vontary upon his vorage; the imaginary extent of this to bis dast, and the supposed scalinges of the earth.

as large is share in the source of a second of a second of an early as large is share in the source contained with Tesoanelli, a learn ed chert-matter of Florence, who seat air his hearty approval of the vertice, together with the found stip, which join money actual by used upon the voyage. This are was burd and the calculations of italeav and Merco Folo and der ofer the oppiers social of a in front of the western sousts of air for and Surope.

John the Second sevended the throne of Portugal in 1491, inspired by the nautical somewards of als grand-wrele, Frind Henry. Muder his direction his two pays'stans, Redarings and Johean, periosted the astrolate, the modisevel forerward of the modern sextant, which epoles seven to calculate, from the sttile of the same be calculate, from the squate. Shortly after the improvement of the astrolabe, Columbus first sought the royal patronage of King John for his voyage of exploration. The King submitted the project to various learned men, who discouraged the attempt to sail westward in an effort to reach the coast of Asia. The Bishop of Ceuta suggested that King John send secretly a vessel to sail westward according to Columbus' chart, to discover if there were any merit in the plan. Such a vessel was dispatched, but after sailing several days in a westerly direction returned with the news that no land had been sighted. When Columbus learned of this treachery he refused to have further dealings with the King and departed secretly with his son Diego from Lisbon. The death of his wife and the attitude of the King determined him to dissolve allegiance to Portugal.

Book Two

Tradition asserts, writes Irving, that after leaving Portugal Columbus sought aid of both Genoa and Venice in furtherance of his enterprise, but that each of these governments was in such dire straits that it could afford no help. Columbus is definitely located in Spain, however, in 1485, where he is seeking to interest some of the wealthy Spanish nobles in his project. The Dukes of Medina Sidonia and Medina Celi both considered Columbus' theories for a time, but the former finally considered them too visionary, while the latter, actually on the point of turning two or three caravels over to the navigator, was deterred by the realization that if a rich kingdom were

-82-

hortly after the iminovement of the atrolate, following (itre acquit the royal retremage of fine long for his voyage of exploration. The fing submitted the project to various learned most, who alsourned the attact to sail werture is a cifort to reach the court of fait. The Histor of Caute angueted the firs form with everytic a voyage to sail extern acquiring to able the source of account to and ever an accurate acquiring to the reach the court of fait. The Histor of Caute angueted the firs form with everytic a voyage to and ever an acquiring to able a versal was discover if there were an action has a first direction returned with the own that no has had be note further desting with the first and the second to note further desting with the King and the second to note further desting with the King and therapit proto have further desting with the King and therapit prosection of first first destinate with the direction for the sector of the first first second of the first of the sector of the first first of the second of the second of the first first of the second of the second of the first of the second of sectors of the first destination of the second of the second of the first of the second of the first of the first of the first of the second of the first of the first of the first of the second of the second of the first of the first of the second of the second of the first of the first of the second of the second of the first of the first of the second of the second of the first of the first of the second of the second of the first of the first of the first of the second of the second of the first of the first of the first of the second of the first of the second of the second

0787 200

Tradition esserts, writes Irving, that after leaving fortural Columbus sought aid of both bonds and Venice in further. ands of the enterprise, but that each of these governments as in and the etrates that it sould afferd no halp. Solumbus is definitely located in Spain, bowever, in 1495, where he is coninst. The Subset in Spain, bowever, in 1495, where he is coninst. The Subset is start, bost is selier both considerad Calumbus' theories for a time, but the former finally and clared thes to visionary, while the latter, contain paint of turning the realise for a time, but the former finally on the solution of turning the or times oursets over to the avergetor, ad determed by the realisation that if a mich rivated were

mster.

discovered, the King of Spain would demand possession of it for himself.

Irving draws a brilliant picture of the glories of Spain at this period of her greatness. The union of Aragon and Castille by the marriage of Ferdinand and Isabella united the country politically and religiously. Spain now became a nation and under the inspired leadership of its joint sovereigns succeeded in throwing off the Moorish yoke, centuries old. Ferdinand was successful in accomplishing two other ambitions, the expulsion of the Jews and the establishment of the Inquisition.

Columbus was reduced to poverty when he arrived at Cordova to seek the aid of King Ferdinand. He was given an hospitable reception by Alonzo de Quintanilla, controller of the treasury of Castile, who became an ardent upholder of his theories. He could not obtain immediate audience of the sovereigns, who were then engrossed in their campaign against the Moors. During months of idle waiting he became acquainted with Antonio Geraldini, the Pope's nuncio, and his brother, Alexander Geraldini, tutor to the children of the Queen, a friendship which was of aid later in interesting Isabella in his projected voyage. Months later at Salamanca, through the influence of his host Alonzo de Quintanilla, he obtained an audience with the Grand Cardinal of Spain, the most important personage about the court. The Cardinal was greatly impressed with the earnestness and intelligence of Columbus and came to believe in the practicability of his ideas.

Through the influence of the Cardinal, Columbus finally gained his first audience with the sovereigns themselves.

-83-

discovered, the Kine of Spain would send passession of it for himself. If Living disas a pulliant ploture of the gloried of spain at this parted of her gratities. No gripe of sengin and tastille or the pairties of fortifiered and isself united the courtty politically and religiously. Spain not because a dation and ander the inspired landership of its foirt anvaration and an binosize off the soundal yous, contarior off. Serdineal was another the inspired landership of the foirt anvaration and an binosize off the soundal yous, contarior off. Serdineal was another the inspired landership the other satifies off. Serdineal was another the inspired landership the other satifies off. Serdineal was another the soundal the soundal yous, contaries off. Serdineal was another the second field and other satifies off. Serdineal was another the fort and encoded of the landership of the serdineal was

Columns was reduced to powert, when he errived at Dordove t even the aid of the redukantle, to was stream an heapitable treestion by Monto de Guintanillo, controller of the treamury of Guatile, who became an ordert monoider of the broncler, who are then engressed in tasir compates against the source burne, work of this solution, and interest the source burne, burne and the of this solution, and interest the source burne, burne and the of this solution, and interest sith Antonio Geralter the sould not became to be and a constituted the source burne, and the of the solution, and his broken against the source becalter the sould not be the became constituted with Antonio Geralter the source monoto, and his brokening the Antonio Geralter the source, through the influence of the book his boat Alora bar tanilla, he obtained an andience with the Grand Cartinal of Spain, the roat important personage about the court. So dard naily the sources to be allow to the course the source of the boat has year the and the solution to the course and incelling for of dolar-

Through the influence of the Carilloni, Columna rinally

Ferdinand, a keen judge of men, at once recognized that Columbus was no ordinary dreamer, but a navigator and scientist of vast attainment. Not trusting his own judgment, he assembled the most learned astronomers and cosmographers in the kingdom for a conference.

Many of these learned men were Churchmen of high rank, as well as scientists. At the Council of Salamanca he found himself impeded by monastic bigotry, for his beliefs were opposed on religious grounds. Quotations from the ecclesiastical writer Lactanius were brought forth in which he asked if there were: "--any so foolish as to believe that there are antipodes with their feet opposite to ours: people who walk with their heels upward, and their heads hanging down?" St. Augustine was quoted as saying: "--to believe that there were inhabited lands on the opposite side of the globe would be to maintain that there were nations not descended from Adam, it being impossible for them to have passed the intervening ocean." Columbus found it impossible at this time to remove their prejudices and objections, so that he did not then have an opportunity to present his plan in its entirety.

1

In the year 1487 Columbus is still following the court in an effort to obtain another audience with the sovereigns. Ferdinand and Isabella are constantly on the move in pressing their campaign against the Moors and the only answer he can obtain is that neither money or time is available at present, but that he

Washington Irving, Life and Voyages of Columbus, p. 68.

-84-

Fordinand, a keen Aude of man, at once recognized that followbus was no ordinary dreamer, has a namigulor and scientist of the sotalsmant. Not dreamer, has a namigulor and scientist of the sotal lasrnot intronomers and conscreptors in the singlos

- 20-

In the year 1437 folumbus is still following the court in an effort to obtain another andience with the sovereigne. Forstrand and issibilit are constantly on the move in pressing task empaign agained the Soors and the only source he can obtain is that poltant coney or time is available at pressing, but that he

saluetin invite, inte and forered of doluging of

will receive further consideration when the war ends.

Columbus, disheartened at such treatment, left the Spanish court and sought refuge at the Convent of La Rabida. This chance visit was to prove a turning point in his fortunes. The prior, Juan Perez de Marchena, fell into conversation with him and at once recognized his worth. He called Garcia Fernandez, a learned man of the neighborhood, and Martin Alonzo Pinzon, head of a family of wealthy navigators, who were quickly converted to C_olumbus' beliefs. Friar Juan Perez knew that Columbus considered going to the French court for aid and decided to communicate with Queen Isabella, whose confessor he had been. A letter dispatched to the good Queen brought an immediate order for his presence and in the audience which followed Isabella showed great interest in Columbus and begged that he present himself once more at court.

Columbus arrived at court at the time of the surrender of Granada to Spain. He was favorably received by the soverigns and persons of consequence appointed to negotiate with him. His theories had now won acceptance, but a new difficulty arose. Fernando de Talavera, Archbishop of Granada, who had great influence with the Queen, persuaded her that Columbus' terms were impossible. Columbus demanded that he be made admiral and viceroy over all lands discovered and that he be given one tenth of all gains resulting from conquest or trade. The archbishop thought it absurd for an indigent foreigner, as he regarded Columbus, to demand such reward and insisted that, in case of

-85-

will receive further considered in the the way and. Coimfair, dispertenses at and previous, fait the formation is court and sought refere at the Convert of la landa. The observe visit such to revere a turning wind in his fortunas. The prior, hum fairs to barohens, fail into convertation with the and at once recentized he worth, ile called darcis Fernanies, and at once recentized he worth, ile called darcis Fernanies, hand of a farily of weather and tertin Moneo Tinson, worted in d₀lumbus' beliefe Frize Juen leves have the destine to be computed with catch is called for all the distribution of the tertily of weather Frize Juen leves have the destine to be computed with catch incoming, whose conference he had be intern dispetence and in the destine haved in all and destine is tern dispetence and in the distribution of the distribution is the first interest in distributions which followed have intern dispetence and in the distribution of the birst he present is the first interest in distributions which followed have during from the state of the birstone which followed he present is the state interest in distributions of beyond his the present during from the state of the birstone which followed have during from the state of the birstone which followed he be and book.

- 25-

Diductor intered at court at the time of the entronder of transit to Shain. As whe favorably foreived by the coverture and persons of seminquence inperinted to regolitate with him. Mi theories had now won acceptance, but a new difficulty shore. Permando de Talavera, treinderso of franses, who had freek inillence with the queen, persualed har that Columba's borns were independed. Columbus communed that the less forth one tenth of independence of discovered and that he be given one tenth of eit edges it is abound for an indicate. The architect theory over all lends discovered and that he be given one tenth of theory is abound for an indicate of trade. The architect theory is abound for an indicate of the less of architect theory is abound for an indicate of the less of the dage of columbus, to demand which he ward and the lated that, in dage of failure, Spain would be the laughing stock of the world if she granted such terms. His influence swayed the Queen and negotiations were once more broken off and Columbus departed from court. Eighteen years of his life had been devoted to fruitless search for aid.

Again it was the friends of Columbus who turned the tide. Luis de St. Anglel, receiver of the ecclesiastical revenues in Aragon, sought audience with the Queen. He reminded her how other powers had increased national prestige through discovery. He pleaded with her not to be misled by the prdjudices of bigoted men and upheld the soundness of Columbus' views. In the end his eloquence won, Columbus was overtaken, and America saved for Spain. The Queen offered to pledge her jewels to finance the expedition, as the treasury of Spain was almost exhausted by years of warfare, but seventeen thousand florins were actually advanced by Ferdinand himself. Articles were drawn up satisfactory to Columbus.

Columbus now went to Palos to prepare for the voyage. Difficulties at once presented themselves. The demand of the sovereigns for ships and men met with refusal, when owners and crews learned the hazardous nature of the undertaking. At length Martin Pinzon and his brother Vicente offered to supply one vessel, the necessary crew, and to go themselves upon this voyage of discovery. Two other vessels were pressed into service by the royal officials. Difficulties were constantly arising, often caused by Gomez Rascon and Christoval Quintero, the owners of one of

-86-

failure, Spain Folls in the Line Languing shoch of the world it whe granted such torias. Als influence emerged the Queen and negotictions were once more proban off and Colembus Constel from ourt. Eighteen years of the life bat beep devoted to fruities estrois for ald.

Again it was the friends of Columbus who turned the tide. Ants de Gb. Anglei, resolver of the ecclesization revenues in Aragon, cought autistics vith the Anem. He resthed her her other powers had increased mational provide through through through theory, is pladed with her hot to be also by the projudicet of higolod and and upheld the menutions of Onlumbus' views. In the age his stadion, the queen offered to filedes her jewals to finance the studition, as the treasure of longes her jewals to finance the goans of wertare, but seventeen thousand for a studie to years of wertare, but seventeen thousand for a studie to years of wertare, but seventeen thousand for a studie to years of wertare, but seventeen thousand for a studie of the seventee to years of wertare, but seventeen thousand for a studie of the seventees of the seventee of the seventees of the seventees and the years of wertare, but seventeen thousand for a studie of the seventees of the seventees of the seventees of the seventees of seventees of the seventees of the seventees of the seventees of seventees of the sevent

Columbra and sont to Pales to prepare for the vertice. bit ficulties at once presented themselves. The dermod of the neverexemp for bills and gen mat with refusal, abou ormers and oreve learned the hatarkous mature of ans undersaiing. At length kerthe decembry orev, and to go themselves upon this voyage of discovery. Two other yeadels were presend into service by the rolal officials. Difficulties were presend into service by the rolby Comes Randow bud Christoval constantly artaine, often onus of by Comes Randow bud Christoval cuintero, the owners of one of the vessels seized, the Pinto. Crews were constantly deserting. The calkers employed upon the vessels did their work poorly and disappeared when required to do it over again.

At length, in August, the vessels were ready for sea. The largest was the Santa Maria, which was decked. The Pinta was commanded by Martin Pinzon, with his brother as pilot. The third, the Nina, was commanded by a third brother, Vicente Pinzon. Numerous government officials sailed as representatives of the King. There was also a physician, various private adventurers, several servants, and ninety mariners, making a total of one hundred and twenty persons.

Book Three

In constant touch with original sources, Irving includes in his "Life" the prologue to the journal or "log" which Columbus kept daily as the official record of the voyage. While off the coast of Spain, the Pinta signaled that her rudder was broken and unhung, an accident which Columbus suspected had been contrived by the owners, in the hope that their vessel might be left behind. Columbus made the necessary repairs at the Canary Islands and proceeded. While at the island of Gomera, a vessel brought news of the presence of Portuguese caravals nearby. Fearing capture, because of the hostility of Portugal toward the expedition, Columbus hastened to sea on September sixth.

Columbus now issued orders that, if the vessels became separated, each was to continue to sail westward for seven hundred leagues, at which point he expected to discover land. He

-87-

tim vessels seized, the Finte. Grown fore constantly departing. The colliver employed upon the vessels did their work poorly and disappeared when required to to it over emain.

At length, in August, the vessels were realy for sea. The largest was the fanta Meria, which was decked. The Pinta as commanied by Martin Finson, with his brother as pilot. The third, the Fina, was companied by a third prother, Meente Finzon. Materous government officials sailed as representatives of the King. Hore was also a physician, various private alventurers, several servants, and minety sariners, making a total of one hundred and treaty persone.

Bonk Three

In constant taught with original sources, Trving includes in his "Life" the grologue to the Journal or "log" which Coludbus kupt daily as the official record of the voyage. While off the coast of Spain, the Fints standed that her rudder was brobar and unings, an accident which Columbus suspected had heat contrived by the owners, in the Mone that their vessel alght be left behind. Colusbus made the necessary reacher is the Car ary talands and proceeded. While at the failer of deserv, a vensel brought news of the presence of fortugiese gar vals nearby, fairing explains, the heatility of Portugal toward the capeal-

Columbus now Lesued orders that, if the vesuels became sensitied, each was to continue to call westward for poven hunired leagues, at which point he expected to discover land in

-87

now resorted to strategy, in order to quiet the fears of his crew, and kept two reckonings, one a record of actual distance sailed, the other a much shortened record. About September thirteenth Columbus noted a variation in the compass, which ceased to point to the north star, varying five or six degrees to the northwest. His pilots soon discovered the variation and became greatly alarmed, as they feared that the compass would fail tham altogether. Columbus now reasoned that in reality the needle was still pointing to the north star, but that the position of the north star itself was changing, as did the other heavenly bodies.

With admirable clearness Irving points out that it was not the elements which Columbus had to fight, but the fears of his men. Birds believed to be land birds frequently flew aboard the ships. A continuous east wind made rapid progress possible. Great masses of weeds were often evident, another evidence of land. But the fearful seamen wondered if the wind might not always be east in this quarter of the globe, preventing their return in a westerly direction. Stories of ships unable to break through these large masses of seaweed were called to mind. They had already sailed farther eastward than man had ever sailed before, but still land, daily expected, did not appear. If it was calm, his men could not understand the absence of hugh waves in mid-ocean. A heavy swell, unaccompanied by wind, threw them into new terror. In short, the crews were in such a mental state that C₀lumbus daily feared that he might

-88-

now reserved to atmategy, is grier to suice the forms of his even, and here two realignings, one a regord of saval distance actied, the other a much chordened regord. About Nortenber thirtsendi, folledus noted a variation in the compase, which be the continuest. We works at a variation in the compase, which the the northwest. We pilote soon discovered the variation and because fractly discussed, as they formed that the folgest would fail that situge there is a they formed the institution that the needle was diall pointing to the institution, and that the reation of the forth star itself was charther, with and because fractly discuss. Salumine now reasoned that the formation that the reation of the forth star itself was charther, as that the reation of the forth star itself was charther, as

"It's allitude of evenues invite roluss out that it was not the elements which forwards had to fight, but the request; from of the map. Mints velleved to be lend birds frequest; from stoard the ships. I combinuous east that ands request; from mossible. Ordet meases of mode were often evident, another about not slaws be bast in this duarter of the stoke multi into their roturn in a sectorly lireotian. Contour of the stoke that. They had already streeted of evident of the stoke and the frequent these large meases of evident of the stoke into their these large meases of evident of the stoke and the tasks roturn in a sectorly lireotian. Contour of entry and the way had already satis factor evident the stoke and. They had already satis factor evident the stoke ever satisd before, but still here, dally exported, did wo appear, if it was the base in the sector, dally exported, and are the thready the offer offer the sector of the stoke are an ind, thready the state of the store of the the stoke are and all already base of still here, dally exported, and appear at a store that before and the the stoke of a burd, thread these that for the store, is event the data are a stoke the the tote offer the state of the stoke of and, thread these that for the base of the base of the stoke of and, a sector the state for the base of the base of the base of the area in the state the state for the state the stoke the stoke of the stoke of and is a sector that for the base of the base of the base of the stoke of area in the stoke that for the state for the stoke the stoke in the stoke of be compelled to return without accomplishing his purpose.

-89-

King Ferdinand had offered a reward of ten thousand maravedis to him who first discovered land. His crew was on the point of mutiny, but Columbus managed to pacify them, aided by the constant signs of land which almost daily appeared. On September twenty-fifth Martin Pinzon raised a shout from the Pinzon: "Land! Land! I claim my reward, semor." There was indeed an appearance of land at about twenty-five leagues distance to the southwest. Columbus threw himself on his knees and gave thanks to God. But, alas, the morning light proved the expected land to have been only a cloud on the horizon. On the seventh of October a gun was discharged from the Nina, land was again announced, but again it proved an illusion.

Columbus had now sailed westward seven hundred and fifty leagues. Clouds of small field-birds about the vessels, a phenomenon which had greatly aided Fortuguese explorers, convinced him that land was near. Three days passed, but no land. The men clamored, but Columbus now assumed a decided tone, told them that the Spanish sovereigns were the patrons of this expedition, and that they expected success. The men were now in open rebellion, but signs of land, as the finding of a reed, a small board, and a staff artificially carved, convinced them that land really could not be far distant.

Columbus himself, from his station on the high poop of his vessel, thought he perceived a light. Pedro Gutierrez, is compatient to return atthout accountioning his purposes. Alty "statiant With othered a remain of ten thousand maravalue to his who first discovered land, his crea was on the point of mutiny, but teluming managed to packy them, alose by the constant signs of land which almost faily argument. On Sepmand! Land! I claim by remard, scane." There was tailed an ap-"land! Land! I claim by remard, scane. There was tailed an appositivest. Columbus thread to be his base distance to the iso to be a been only a cloud on the base. On the expected land to have been only a cloud on the barban. On the seventh of cotober a gain was finited from the line. In the seventh of accounts a finite of the state of the barban of the seventh of to have been only a cloud on the barban. On the seventh of accounts a gain was finited from the line. I and was again account of the scale of the state of the barban of the base only a cloud on the barban. I the base again account of the scale of the barban of the barban of the base only a cloud on the barban. I the base again of the base base only a cloud on the barban. I the base seventh of the base state of the scale of the barban of the barban of the seventh of actors of the scale of the barban of the barban of the barban of the base base only a cloud on the barban. I the barban of the seventh of the barban of the scale of the barban of the ba

Columbus had now colled westward seven hundred and fifty hencues. Cloude of small field-birds shout his vessels, a phefight that had specify alded fortestied explorers, or virial his that had and mean. Three days passed, but no land. The me classored, but Columbus new assumed a decided tomo, bolt they that the Special severalges were the rateman of this expedition, and that the steps of hand, as the finding of a read, a meal hour, that a staff artificially carret, convinced the steps that hour and a staff artificially carret, convinced the steps that head the sould not be far distant.

Colubius Nimeelf, from his station on the high poop of his vessol, thought be perceived a light. Fedro utheree.

APL.

gentleman of the King's bedchamber, saw it also, but before anyone else could be called the light had disappeared. At two in the morning a gun from the Pinta signalled land. It was first seen by a seaman named Rodrigo de Triana, but the reward was afterward adjudged to belong to the admiral, as he had first seen the light. The land was now clearly seen at a distance of two leagues.

Book Four

In the preface to his work, Irving declared that it was his ambition to write a detailed and circumstantial narrative of the voyages of Columbus. It is worth noting that he has succeeded in doing much more than this. He has succeeded in picturing with especial vividness and understanding the dramatic moments in the life of the great navigator, for whom he had formed a boundless admiration. His picture of the landing of Columbus for the first time upon American soil is notable for its expression of the spirit of the occasion.

Columbus ordered the boats to be manned and armed and quickly gained the shore. He knelt upon this new soil and kissed it and returned thanks to God with tears of joy. Rising, he drew his sword, unfurled the royal standard, named the island San Salvador, and took possession of it in the name of Ferdinand and Isabella. The natives approached timidly and gazed at this new god. They marveled at the shining armor of these fair-haired white men. Naked, with painted bodies, their only arms were lances. They were a well-built race, muscular and active,

-90-

gantionen of the Ming's bedetamber, sam it wise, but before any one close could be called the light bad disappeared. It two la the morning a gud from the sints signalled land. It was first seen by a monant named Rolf to de Triens, but the remark was afterward adjudged to belong to the aduiral, as he has first seen the light. The land was now clearly seen at a distance of two leagues.

-00-

THOY YOUR

In the preface to ble work, "rules declared that is and his ambition to write a detailed and circumstantial vermative of the versame of Goluminas. It is worth noting that he has and second in fring and more than this. He can succeeded in giotaring "its especial vividness and understanding the drambid moments in the life of the great anyigner, for what he had formed a bounding admiration. He picture of the leading of clustum for the first time upon serion pull is notable for its excreteled of the appret of the occasion of the leading of its excreteled of the appret of the costal of the leading of

Columbus ordered the institute to be moved and armed and quickly gained the allore. He meak upon this new woll and hits ed it and returned thanks to ded with tears of joy. Hains, ne drew him sword, unfurted the rotal standard, named the hale and hashells. The matives approximated that has of fordinand her god. They marveled at the shining armor of their only size ware white sem. Maked, with painted wolfen, their only size ware lances. They ware a malt-built race, migrailer and sative, wearing simple ornaments, occasionally of gold.

The admiral gave them colored caps, glass beads, hawks' bells and similar trifles, which the Portuguese had found delighted the natives of Africa. Inquiry as to where the gold was procured resulted in signs toward the south. Columbus was persuaded that he had reached the islands described by Marco Polo as lying opposite to Cathay, in the Chinese Sea. The country to the south, he thought must be the island of Cipango, abounding in gold.

Columbus now circumnavigated the island, found it of small size, and decided not to occupy it. Taking seven of the natives, that they might acquire the Spanish language and serve as interpreters, he set sail in a southerly direction. Landing on various islands of this archipelago, which was in reality the group known as the Bahamas, he gave them names, took on board water and supplies of native food, and endeavored to gain information from the natives. The suggestions that he did gather misled him completely. Pointing southward, the Indians indicated that a large island, called Cuba, was to be found in that direction. This must surely be Cipango and Columbus set sail once more to the south.

On the morning of October twenty-eighth Cuba appeared over the horizon. Columbus was struck with the size and the imposing topography of the island. Upon landing, he took possession in the name of Spain and called it Juana, in honor of Prince John. Irving remarks upon the delight of the navigator in the natural

-91-

wearing simple ormanents, occasionally of gold. The samthal gave thus colored days, gland reads, hauge' balls and shiller tailer, which the Corbugness had found delighted the rativos of Africa. Insulty as to there the gold, was propured resulted in signa torsers the areth. Columns was to: anaged that as had prophed the inturie described by Harmo tele as lying optosite to deting, in the datases one. The country to the south, he thought must be the interes one. The country to in gold.

Optiments now of requiring the total, found to of mail size, and dochied not to endury it. Taing seven of the nertyen, that they might noguire the spanish language and perve as interpreters, he are sail in a scatherly direction. I willing of vertices to be an tail in a scatherly direction. I willing the group known as the Banemer, he pure thes users, took pe bened water and any libs of matire food, and codesvary to get information from the numbers, he pure thes users, took pe thes a large island, estimate food, and codesvary to get thes a large island, estimates or be constant, the Indiano indiceted thes a large island, estimates and columbus he did gather thes a large island, estimates and columbus he have allow then a large island, estimates and columbus he is the did set of the to be found in the state of the second maters in the following them a large island, estimates and columbus he is the did set of the south work is a the second and columbus he is the did set of the south.

Conthe morning of Oglovier transferight oute spearch of a the Hordson. Columnate was attuch atth the size and the important topography of the Island. Foun Landing, he teak pessenation in the name of Spain and called it Juans, in humor of trinov cour-

- 20-

beauties of this new-found land. He is delighted with its scenery, its woods and flowers, its birds and animals. He fancied that he had found India because he thought he detected the fragrance of Oriental spices.

Martin Pinzon informed Columbus that three Indians had described to him a place but four day's journey which they called Cubanacan. They indicated that it abounded in gold. Pinzon thought they were naming the Tartar sovereign, Cublai Khan, and Columbus agreed that their statement seemed to confirm the near presence of the continent of Asia. Further sailing along the coast failed to result in reaching the court of this potentate, so Columbus landed again for further information. He understood a native to state that the Khan lived four day's journey in the interior. He therefore sent two messengers, with an Indian to guide them, to the supposed court, with instructions to inform the Great Khan of their arrival and desire to be received by him.

A few days later the envoys returned and made their report. After penetrating the interior twelve leagues, they had come to an Indian village of some fifty houses. They had been received ceremoniously by the natives. Luis de Torress, one of the messengers, then addressed them in Hebrew, Chaldaic, and Arabic, to no avail. He showed them specimens of cinnamon, pepper, and other spices, but they failed to recognize them. Gold seemed conspicuous by its absence. The messengers had been forced to conclude that they had not arrived at the court of the Great Khan. They had, however, seen tobacco smoked for the first time and had found an

-92-

beauties of this now-found land. He is delighted with its scanery, its woods and flowers, its birds and animato. He familed that he had found India because he thought he detected the fragrance of Driental spices.

Marbin Minon informed dolugious that three faiture had described to him a place but four day's journey which they outh ed Cubanaces. They indicated that it abounded in gold. Hinson thought they were maning the farter sovereign, Caulai Khan, and columbud agreed that their statement seemed to confirm the neur columbud of the continent of isls. Further salling along the endest failed to result in reaching the court of this potentate, a native to state that the farther information. He untarated interior, He therefore and for further information. He untarated interior, He therefore and the the newsengers, with an indian to guide them, to the autopass again, with instructions to the Grast shan of their arcited wide termetion to information to a solution in the instruction information of the indian to interior. He therefore and the newsengers, with an indian to guide them, to the autopass again, with instructions to information of the instruction information of the indian to the Grast shan of their arcited phenesing to be received of the file of the state of their arcited is indicated to be received of the state of the instruction in the indicated of the indian to the of the instruction in the indicated of the indian to

A few days later the envoys roturned and made their record. After senstrating the interior twoire leagues, they had come to an indian village of some fifty houses. They had been received ceremoniculy by the matives. Lots de forress, one of the messenters, then midressed them in Nervew, Chaldais, and Arebio, to m aveil. He showed them apochesne of cimmanon, response, and other estage, but they failed to recognize them. Sold compare, and other ous by its merence. The messengers had been forced to complemters how and and the second for the inert that for another aveil, and not arrived at the court of obs from the forced to complembous by its merence. The messengers had been forced to complemtherever, cash tabased should for the first thre and had found the however, cash tabased should for the first thre and had found at

- 20-

edible root which they had called the potato.

On the twelfth of November Columbus resumed his explorations, this time for an island which the Indians had called Babeque. Had he continued in his former direction he would have discovered Cuba to have been an island, and not a part of the mainland, which he believed it to be to the day of his death. While voyaging in the direction of Babeque, he decided to put his ship about for the night, as the wind was strong and contrary. The Pinta did not obey his signals. Night coming on, he ordered signal lights hoisted at the masthead, but when morning came the Pinta, under command of Martin Pinzon, had disappeared. The desertion of Pinzon was a serious matter for Columbus. Had he returned to Spain to claim credit for the discoveries? Columbus was under financial obligations to the Pinzons and quarrels had already arisen between them, as they were jealous of the authority of the admiral. Unable to seek the missing vessel, Columbus continued his course until he reached, on December fifth, the eastern end of Cuba.

-93-

While steering at large near the eastern extremity of Cuba, undecided upon his course of action, the natives pointed to land to the southeast, which they called Bohio, the name by which Columbus understood them to designate some country which abounded in gold. This was in reality the island of Hayti, which the admiral named Hispaniola, where he erected a cross on the headland commanding a great harbor. Columbus pursued his usual careful investigations, after he had persuaded the frightened natives

.ofifor and belies bon yent union foor ending - or las en necusor autor lob redevou to dell'a dis ads no read block of actional value's all at beambined as the . augost Alsouveren faile to have been an feland, and not a nart of the tildand, which he believed it to be to the day of his dath. the of babical of , superation of Babeque, he desided to put the ship about for the night as the wind was strong and conthis. The Tinta aid not oboy Miss algorize. Might coming on, he The resention of Plassa was a serious matter for Columbus. Had - mulco restricted to Spain to claim oredit for the discoveries follow The was under financial obligations to the Fincode and querela and already artison between them. as they were justents of the sufficility of the sharpel. Unable to seak the missing versel. dolumbus continued ais course withi be reached, on December firth. isdur to fine middede off

While stearing at large man the saters extremity of Onla, underlied upon his source of setton, the astron pointed to last to the sourcesst, which they culled Bohio, the aster by shich dolumns understood then to designate some constrp which shoundad in gold. This was in reality the island of 10,201, which the admiral named started be, which he erected a cross of the headtand constanting a great termine he erected has headtand constanting a great termine he erected the first and the full investigations, other head remarked the first start at in rest of the second termines have been and the second the second has a starter to have been and the second the start the full investigations, where he remarked the first termines have of his good intentions. That he was much struck by the fertility of the country and the ideal life of the natives is made evident through the writings of old Peter Martyr, to whom the admiral told his impressions of much that he saw. Irving often refers to this profilic writer of the fifteenth century.

The author gives an unusually clear and circumstantial account of the major disaster which happened to the expedition on the twenty-fourth of December. Columbus had given orders that his two vessels should stand off the coast until daylight. The sea was smooth, there was scarce wind enough to fill the sails, so Columbus went below for the first rest he had permitted himself for twenty-four hours. He had taken the precaution to sound the nearby waters and there were no rocks or shoals in their course. As soon as the admiral had gone below, the steersman gave the helm to one of the ship-boys and went to sleep. The watch on deck slumbered also, entrusting their safety to the inexperienced lad at the helm. Treacherous currents carried the ship out of its course upon a sand-bank. Columbus rushed on deck, followed by the master of the ship who should have been on duty. He at once ordered out a boat to carry an anchor astern to warp the vessel from the shoal. His men, excited and half-asleep, misunderstood his orders and rowed, instead, to the Nina. The time lost determined the fate of the vessel, for she became more firmly embedded in the sand, her seams opened filling her with water, and she fell over on her side. Columbus took refuge on the Nina. He speaks in glowing terms of the

-94-

of his good intentions. That he was much struck by the fortillity of the country and the ideal life of the natives is made evident through the writings of old later series, to whom the admiral told his imprecations of much that he saw. Irwing often refere to this profille writer of the fifteenth contany.

on the Lachty-fourth of Secencer. Columbus had given orders and skilled ago and seene was arende what soone as per sall satis, so of this want here for the first reat he stated ted himself for brenty-four hauns. in had taken the procention to gound the nearby waters and there ware no rocks or shoals in their course. As soon as the adviral had gove below, the stars gave the helt to one of the ship-boys and wort to gloop. The satch on deer eluminared size, entrueting thoir aste ty to the inexperienced lad at the Dain. Treacherous currents carried the sain out of its source upon a sand-home. Golushus flucic daw gins and lo water out to Levellor . the ship who should Pure bean on duty. He al once ordered out a boat to carvy an another astern to marp the vensel from the chool. His man, excitad and half-enlagt, misundaratood bis orders and rowed, instant, -to the Mina. The time lost determined the fate of the vencel. for the beasen more firely anbodded in the sand, har soins open-- Milting her stan water, and the fell ever an her side data but took refuge on the state. He speaks in clouing terms of the

- 10-

sympathy and help of the cacique, or Indian chief, Guacanagari, near whose village he had been shipwrecked.

The shipwrecked crews now took refuge upon the territory of the cacique, whose friendliness proved invaluable to them. Irving goes into much detail about the ideal life of the natives in this natural paradise. Warfare was almost unknown, the necessities of life were obtained almost without labor, and the brotherhood of man seemed almost realized in this uncivilized little community.

The desire of many of his men to remain in the country and the loss of two of his vessels determined Columbus to plant a colony here and return to Spain. Enough of the wreck of the Santa Maria was salvaged to construct a fort, which was defended with the guns of the ship. The admiral believed the natives to be friendly and during his absence his men might explore the territory further in search of gold. He named the fort and the harbor La Navidad, or the Nativity, as the shipwreck had occured on Christmas Day. Thirty-nine of his best men he selected to remain upon the island and he gave the command of the little group to Diego de Arana, naming two others to succeed him in case of his death. On January fourth, 1493, Columbus set sail from La Navidad on his return to Spain.

Book Five

Detained for two days near Hispaniola, the vessel resumed its voyage on the sixth. Almost immediately a sail was seen, which proved to be the Pinta. Martin Pinzon explained his

-95-

sympathy and help of the essigne, or Todian obist, Guncamagari,

The all orrected graws now tool refure upon the berritory of the orotque, mbase friendlindes proved inveloable is them. Unvine goes hale much detail about the incol life of the native in this natural deredies. Warthre was almost unknown, the descrisities of life were obtained almost without labor, and the brot hood of an assess almost realized in this waristed little orangity.

The desire of rank of his and he readed in the country and the lass of two of his rescele det chirologicalized and the second the colory here and return to brain. Enough of the frees of the Sume marks which which the sometries a fort, which was defende with the gume of the ship. The sometries a fort, which was defende with friendly and during this absence his man velops exterior the territory further in describ of gold. He massed the fort and the hereor for law'its, or the Hatfvill, as the coloring on be terridoring the island and he gave the command of the large to Division bay. Thirty-which of his issue can be selended to reach a failed in a gave the command of the little group to about the island and he gave the command of the little group to death. On Janmary fourth, 1993, dolumbus and sail from he david an his return to fruth, 1993, dolumbus and sail from he david an his return to fruth.

BOOK FLYS

betatped for two days near Hapandole, the redail reduce reist voyage on the sixth. Almost immediately a shil was seen; which proved to be the Finte. Martin Finzon exclained his desertion by stating that he had been unable to join Columbus, having been driven by unfavorable winds to the eastward. From other sources the admiral found that tales of a country abounding in gold had lured Pinzon on a voyage, that he had landed on numerous islands in the neighborhood and had acquired some gold from trading for tinkets with the Indians. Anxious to avoid an open break with Pinzon, Columbus pretended to accept his story. He sailed to this trading place of Pinzon's, but found the natives hostile and warlike, so that he thought them to be the Caribs of whom the cacique Guacanagari had informed him. He soon left the island behind on his return voyage to Spain.

The return voyage to Spain was arduous in the extreme. Food and water were rapidly consumed, so that at times they were glad to kill fish and to catch rain water in buckets on the deck. By the tenth of February all felt that they were approaching the coast of Spain, but the Pinzons could not agree upon their position, while C^Olumbus knew that they were one hundred and fifty leagues farther from Spain than they believed. The admiral kept his reckoning to himself, so that he alone would possess accurate information of the correct route to the newly discovered lands.

On February Fourteenth, as the mariners were hopefully on the lookout for land, the wind began to blow with violence and a heavy sea arose. The storm increased in fury and for two days they were compelled to run before the wind with bare poles. The Pinta again became separated and disappeared in the darkness of the night. Columbus assembled the men and each drew lots to perform

-96-

description by stating that he had been much to join following, having heat driven by uni-vorable winds to the eastward. Inca other sources the adairst found that tales of a country alcount in gold had fured Finzan on a voyage, that he had handed on numsus falance in the deigheornood and had securited some gold these truding for thanks the fullions. Antious to avoid an open ortes, the linion, columbus pretanish to accept his action define the tale trading of the fullions. Antious to avoid an open of the state traditic columbus pretanish to accept his action define the called of the fullions. Antious to avoid an open assind to that traditic columbus pretanish to accept his action doubles and vertities, so that he thought them to be the deribe of allow the called columbus pretanish the results of a final the called of the fully of the finance of the second of a state of the final for the final fine of the cold the double of the final fine of the final fine of the final states of the final fine of the final fine of the final states the called the final fine of the final fine of the final final for the final fine of the final fine of the final states of the final fine of the final fine of the final fine final fine final final final final for the final fine final final final fine final fina

The roturn voyage to Spain was arrived in the extrage. Not and mater were rapidly communel, so that at times they mare gied to X111 fish and to catch rain mater in busides on the deck. By the tents of Setmary all felt that they were upproaching the coset of Spain, but the finzons douid not strate upon their posttion, while Suppose may that they were and madred and firty because for ther from Spain than they here are madred and firty is setworked to Minacif, so that he alone work the setwork information of the source of the setwork the setwork information of the source of the setwork the setwork information of the source of route to the nextly discovered lands.

On Fouriary Sourisanth, as the mariners are popefully on the lookoot for land, the stad began to blos with violance and a heavy sea oppose. The store increased in fury and for two currents were conveiled to run before the with with wire outer the state become separated and disappointed in the darknoss of the archit. Soluntus ansombled the men and cach drew love to parform a pilgrimage to some sacred shrine if they were saved from death. He himself drew the first bean marked with a cross.

The thought that the loss of his ships would mean the loss of all that he had accomplished troubled Columbus greatly. He accordingly wrote on a parchment a brief account of his discoveries, wrapped it in wax paper, placed the package in a cake of wax and, enclosing the whole in a cask, threw it overboard, telling his men that he was performing a vow. He attached a similar package to the poop of his vessel, hoping that if the ship went down the barrel might be washed ashore.

On the morning of the fifteenth the wind and sea moderated and soon came the glad cry of "Land", which Columbus believed to be one of the Azores. The island proved to be St. Mary's, but when a part of his crew landed and made a pilgrimage to a nearby chapel in performance of their vow, the governor of the island seized them and cast them into prison. When the men failed to return promptly, Columbus became suspicious. The arrival of the governor, Juan de Castenada, in a boat alongside the ship found the admiral prepared for action, whereupon the representative of the King of Portugal retired precipitately. Shortly afterward two priests and a notary came aboard and inspected Columbus' papers. When convinced of the truth of his statements, they informed him that the King of Portugal had issued orders that Columbus be seized wherever found.

After encountering a severe storm, Columbus again found himself in distress off the Portuguese coast and was obliged to

-97-

a pulgrimage to come accred chrine if they were dayod from leath. He binoelf drow the first been marked wich a cross.

loss of all that he had accomplished troubled following greatly In secondingly wrote on a perdmant a prior concerns of his dis coverses, meaning it in wax report, placed the pedrage in a per of wax and, enclosing the whole in a cask, three it overhourd, telling his wer that he was performing a vov. We standed a statut pudrage to the prob of his visual, hoping that if the shift went form the barwel sight be visualed astrone.

on the solute of the tifteents the mini and see sodersied and soon ease his glad eer of "land", which Columbus ballsved to be one of the Asores. The Saland worse to as St. Mary's, and when a part of his error laded and make a oligrinage to a starty chapel in nerformance of their yow, the governor of the solard selved thes and east them into prison. Then the see "all of the governor, Jusc de Lastonada, in a batt slongaide the abit found the startes presented for setion, whereards the repof the governor, Jusc de Lastonada, in a batt slongaide the resentative of the King of Fortugal retired, presiditately. Shop is first found the that herbridd for setion, whereards the reptor interact and a mitary come above had inspected is after informate herbridge of for trate where herbridge the shop information of the King of Fortugal retired, presiditately. Shop is a first found the that and a mitary come above, and inspected is interact and the order late of the trate of the trate of the started they informate herbridge the start of cortugal had there orders they informate herbridge der start had there is the started of the found the set of the trate of the trate of the trate of the trate of the started of the trate of the started of the starter of the trate of the trate of the trate of the trate of the starter of the trate of the

After ancountering a severa storm; consider again found himself in distress off the fortuguese coast and was obliged to

- 10-

seek shelter in the harbor of Rastello. His arrival reached the ears of the Portuguese king, who summoned him to court. Columbus went unwillingly, but was received with royal honors by King John, who showed keen interest in his discoveries. Columbus, of course, believed that he had discovered the island of Cipango and India. The king expressed the fear that the admiral had treppassed on land discovered by the Portuguese, which was comprehended in the Papal Bull granting to the crown of Portugal all the lands which it should discover from Cape Non to the Indies.

Portugal officials went so far as to suggest the assasination of C_olumbus as the best way out of the difficulty, but the King refused to listen to these dastardly proposals. He did, however, agree to the suggestion that he dispatch an expedition, after Columbus' safe arrival in Spain, to seize the lands he had discovered. C_olumbus suspected the motives of the king, but was treated with great consideration and permitted to leave the country, whence he arrived at Palos, his home port, on March fifteenth. The entire voyage had occupied not quite seven months and a half.

Columbus was received with rejoicing at Palos, which was increased when the safety of all the men on the expedition was announced. By a singular coincidence the Pinta, which had survived the storm, came into port on the evening of Columbus' arrival. Martin Pinzon was a greatly disappointed man when he discovered that he was not to gather all the laurels of the expedition.

Columbus repaired to the court at Barcelona immediately,

-98-

Asson abolton in the number of Rangello, the Arrival resoned the sears of the Fortunesse Mins, who summented his to court. Columtion work unwillingly, into and reactings with Physel Denors by Aldone, the standed heat interval in his dimensioner. Columna, an occurs, believed that hereinest in his dimensioner to depend and india. The single expressed the fear thet the admiral and his onesed on land discovered by the Fortugade, which was concesthe fands in the Park standards of the Fear thet the admiral and his onesed on land discovered by the Fortugade, which was concesthe fands which it about discover from fore the architel and his the lands in the Park stand discover from fore the distributed with the lands which it about discover from fore the distributed with distributes of the sector to the discover, but distributes to the sector to be fact the distributed with distributes of the sector to be fact to be discover. Not the lands which it about distributes the distributed with distributes of the sector to be distributed by the distributes of the sector to be distributed by the distributed in the sector to be distributed by the distributed is the sector to be distributed by the distributed is the sector to be distributed and distributed of the sector to be distributed by an expective distributed is the sector of the distributed of the lands in he distributed of the sector of the matrix of the lands in he distributed of the sector of the matrix of the lands in her distributed distributed constraints of the distributed by an altheory and the sector of the matrix of the distributed by an distributed of the sector of the distributed by and distributed of the distributed by a sector of the distributed by a distributed of the distributed of the distributed by an distributed of the distributed by a distributed by and distributed of the distributed by a distribu

-30-

bry, summe he arrived at relat, his house port, an Harok fiftee The emilie rayes had accounted not emite seren months and a ha foundaries whe received with relations at relat, which was increased when the adjety of hit the an of the expedition was amounced. By a mingular coincidence the Figte, which ind annrived the stark, dame into more enclose the resilut of Johnshid wire the stark, dame into more an the evening of Johnshid the private feather fines when a constant on the evening of Johnshid the stretty is stark.

*

"iscovered that he was not to gather all the laurels of the ex-

Committe repaires on the double at Gribelens irmediately,

where he was received with the highest honors. Irving gives a moving picture of his reception, in which those who had scoffed at his ideas now sought to ingratiate themselves in his favor. He displayed to the court specimens of unknown birds and other animals, rare plants and herbs of medicinal value, native gold in the form of dust, crude masses, or in the form of native ornaments. Feathered natives were brought in, while Columbus described the countries he had discovered. Cuba he thought to be the tip of the Asiatic continent, and the adjacent islands were in the Indian sea. He stressed the wealth to be won from these distant lands and already had visions of a profitable commerce between them and Spain.

Washington Irving is at much pains to depict the political difficulties with which Columbus was obliged to struggle preparatory to his second voyage, which was immediately suggested. His presence in Spain and close contact with every conceivable document bearing on the navigator and his official relations with court officials made him realize, as perhaps no other historian, the secret intrigues and jealousies which surrounded Columbus. As an American, too, he had no incentive to mitigate this blot upon the Spanish national honor, a natural attitude on the part of Spanish historians.

Inspired by the rivalry between Spanish and Portuguese discoverers, King Ferdinand at once sought to legalize the discoveries of C^Olumbus by appealing to Alexander Sixth, the pope, to ratify them. The pontiff consented and issued a bull in which

-99-

here he was required with the highest honore. hiving gives a noving picture of his reception, in which those who had souths at his ideas now sought to ingratize the desastver in the favor. He displayed to the court specimens of mixnown bir is and other colsals, rare plants and heres of socialities value, native sold in the form of dust, and heres of noising value, native sold accided the courtries were brought in, while dolustur descaled the courtries he had distovered. One as thought to be actived the satisfies he had distovered. One as the value in the initian sea, he stranded the westir to be and from these is the initian sea, he stranded the westir to be and from these distant isnues and strended the westir to be an from these backed the satisfies and variance of a son from these is the the farms and strended the variance of a son from these distant isnues and strended the variance of a son from these backees these and strended the variance of a son from these backees these and strended the variance of a son from these backees these and strended the variance of a son from these backees these and strended the variance of a son these these backees these and strended the variance of a son from these backees these and strended the variance of a son from these backees these and strended the variance of a son from these backees these and strended the variance of a son from these backees these and strended the variance of a son from the sone of backees these and strended the variance of the sone these and strender.

Anothing of invite the strands pains to do let the political difficulties with third bolinthe her chiled to struggie here in tary to his adoant works, milds and herediciely suggeted. Whe presents in Spain and close quitant will every gougeiven's dooument bearing on the navigator and his vilidial moletions with some secret intrigues and joulounce which surrounded Coluctus. As an Amorizan, too, he had no incouring to block and upon the Spanish material bonor, a matural stifted of the part of Spanish distorians.

Inspired of the rivalry between Spenish and Fortuguese of severare. Ming Ferdinand at once sought to legalize the discover ies of C^oluminus by appialing to desender Sixth, the pope, to retify thom. The contiff obtaented and iscued a built in which he assigned all lands west of an imaginary line drawn from pole to pole, a hundred leagues west of the Azores, to Spain, and all lands east of this line to Portugal.

Ferdinand appointed Juan Rodriguez de Fonseca, Archdeacon of Seville, to the task of preparing the second voyage to America. This gentleman was a man of little honor and much vindictiveness and he was the cause of untold difficulties to Columbus. Other officials associated with him formed a bureau for the management of Indian affairs. Again the authorities were granted permission to seize any vessel needed for the expedition. No one was permitted to go on this new voyage without the express permission of the severeigns themselves. Expenses of this new journey were met by the grant of two-thirds of all Church tithes and the sale of jewels and other property seized from the Jews upon their expulsion from Spain.

A diplomatic game of hide and seek now took place between Ferdinand and John. King Ferdinand had sent an ambassador with two sets of instructions to the Portuguese court. If he found that King John meditated no treachery, he was to present one note, but if he had reason to think that the Portuguese king was about to send an expedition to seize the newly-discovered lands, he was to present a note of stern warning. But King John had spies at the Spanish court who informed him of every move, so that he received the Spanish ambassador in a conciliatory spirit, while he went on with his preparations for an expedition to America.

Word came one day that a Portuguese caraval had set sail for the West and preparations were hurried to send Columbus away to pole, a hundred leagues west of the Azoron, to Their, and all lands east of this line to forthegal.

-000-

Partitioned appointed first Hattigues de Fonsegs, Arobiteson of Seville, to the test of preparing the second voyage to Aurich mais gentiesen van a sen of littele anner and arb vindlotiventer and is era the sames of untold difficultibe to Opluming, obper of finite affairs. Again the subbribles rere granted pendenter to same any vessel messed for the authorities rere granted pendenter at the source massion of the the subbribles rere granted pendenter to same any vessel messed for the angestition. To and was penalited to go or this new voyage visiout the express pendenter of the severalme themselves. Arated a thout the express pendenter of the severalme themselves. Arated a the dested of this new fourselve of jermin and the subscript select from the law years the volt mutaton from colority select from the law one their ex-

A distinguishing game of hide and see hav book place between resolutioned and Kahn. King Ferminand he sent an ambaarador with the sets of instructions to the Fortaguese court. If he found that time is instructions to the Fortaguese court. If he found but if he had reason to think that the Porbuguese king ese about the send on expedition to selve the newly-discovered lands, he was to present which of thirk that the Porbuguese king ese about at the aparts and the selve the newly-discovered lands, he had the aparts of the information of every hove, so that he he the second the discretence of the construction to actes he were itself of the information for a series have he he had the discretence of the construction of the he he were in with the preparations for an experience the formation of the metric one day that a fortuguese careval had set sail

CONTRACTOR STORE STORE STORE STORE STORE STORE

as soon as possible. A fleet of seventeen vessels was loaded with every possible article that might prove of use in the colonization of the new country. Many Spanish adventurers of the greatest reputation and noblest blood were passengers on these ships. The Church was represented by some of her most famous prelates and missionaries, for the conversion of the natives to the Catholic religion was considered of greatest importance. On the twenty-fifth of September, 1493, Columbus sailed on his second voyage of discovery to the new world.

Book Six

After a brief stop at the Canaries, the admiral sailed westward. He had given each commander sealed instructions, which were to be opened only if the ships became separated, to meet him at the harbor of Nativity, the site of the fort he had constructed. After an uneventful voyage he sighted, on November second, an island to which he gave the name of Dominica. This was one of the islands of the Antilles. After sailing among these islands, Columbus finally anchored near the largest, which he named Guadaloupe. The natives here appeared to be cannibals, for traces of human flesh were seen about their huts. The captain of a caraval and eight men who had gone ashore failed to return at nightfall and were missing several days. Columbus feared they had been captured and devoured, but they finally returned amid great rejoicing.

On November twenty-seventh Columbus anchored at La Navidad, remaining off shore until daylight. In his anxiety to dis-

-101-

as acon as possible. A flest of sevenbeen resels vas loaded alth every Lossible article that might prove of use in the solomizablem of the new soundry. Kany Spanish alventurers of the greatest resultation and noblest blood were passengers on these ables. The Church was represented by some of ter gost famous prelates and missionaries, for the conversion of the mativas to the Saturits religion was considered of greatest importance. On the twenty-fifth of Soptamber, 1403, Columbus sailed on its months.

XIA MOOR

Atter a bater stop at the demanter, the infinite antish restrict. As had given each communion easied instructions, and were to be opened only if the ships became separated, to make a him up has marker of Nativity, the site of the fort he had constructed. After an uneventful voyage he sighted, on November ascond, an island to which he cave the mane of Cominica. This make one of the islands of the Antilios. After satisfies among these islands, Colontus finally suchered near the largest, which is cased fradaloupe. The matives here arguared to be cannibula for traces of mean fields are seen about their huis. He oeptain af a careval and chick are wissing events their huise, he oepterium at mightfall and were missing events tays. foluging tain at hightfall and were missing events tays. foluging for these they had been confined and developed, but they finally re-

- un hovember trenty-seventh Columinas anchored at La Navi-

cover if all were well at the fort he ordered two cannon to be fired, but there was no reply. Fearful of disaster, he was relieved by the arrival of a canoe at midnight, which contained two natives, one of them a cousin of the cacique Guacanagari. This messenger informed Columbus that the cacique had been attacked by Caonabo, the fierce cacique of the golden mountains of Cibao, who had wounded him and destroyed his village.

-102-

At daylight the admiral sent a reconnoitering party ashore, which discovered the fort to be in ruins and without inhabitants. Under the protection of the guns of the fleet, the admiral himself went to the fort and discovered every evidence of disaster. later in the day a few Indians made their appearance and by friendly treatment were persuaded to approach. Some of them knew a little Spanish and were acquainted with the names of the men C₀lumbus had left at the fort. By the aid of an interpreter the story of the disaster finally came to light.

The garrison, upon Columbus' departure, had forgotten all his instructions. Some had seized golden ornaments from the natives; others had violated the women and incurred the enmity of the Indians. Don Diego de Arena, whom Columbus had left in command, had been unable to enforce his authority. The garrison had broken up into little hostile groups and many had left the protection of the fort. Guiterez and de Escobega, with a group of followers, had gone on an expedition after gold to the territory of the hostile cacique Caonabo, who had murdered them and then formed an alliance with the cacique of Marien to attack the fort and drive the white men from the land. cover if all were well at the fort he bidered the cannon to be eired, hut there was no reply. Search of disarter, he was reitered by the errival of a cance at minight, which contained two natives, one of thes a consin of the cooleus Gurennegari. This measures informed Columnos that the cooleus had been staed by Casaato, the fierce cacique of the golden mountaine of dibao, who had mounded him and dostroyed his village.

At deviight the sharrel sent a recomplificning party salars, which discovered the fort to be in rains and without inhabitant. Under the protection of the funk of the flest, the admiral himself were to the fort and discovered every evidence of disactor later in the day a few indians made their appearance and to form by treatment more nersuaded to approximate of the new a liftic Spanish and ware sequestions with the names of the new a lifhad left is the infinite to the flest of an interpreter the iter of the discut of the flest. By the aid of an interpreter the iter of the discut of the set to light.

The garrison, upon Columbus' heparture, had forgetten all the instructions. Some had saired golden erasments from the natives; others and violated the memor and insurred the emity of the infians. In Diege de Arens, when Columbus had left in conmand, had been unable to enforce his sufferity. The garrison had tooker up into little heatile groups the many had left the protection of the fort. Guiteres and de Sacebegs, with a group of follow re, had gone on an expedition after gold to the torritory of the heatile columba, who had surdered them and then forced as alliance with the consigne of Karlen to attack the fort forced as alliance with the consigne of faries to the fort and drive the with the consigne of faries to the fort and drive the with the consigne of faries to the fort The attack had been made and the fort surprised and captured without difficulty. The friendly cacique Guananagari and his men had fought the invaders, but had been put to route. Such was the tale told C lumbus.

Guacanagari was visited a few days later by Columbus, who took with him a large train of attendants to impress the cacique with his power. The story of the chieftain agreed with that told by the interpreters, and the destruction of the village also seemed to confirm the tale, but an examination by a Spanish surgeon of the chieftain's leg showed it to be quite whole and unmarked. The cacique now came on board of Columbus' vessel and was much impressed by the strange things that he saw. On board ship were ten Carib women whom Columbus had freed from Carib captivity. One of them, named Catalina, was of unusual beauty and intelligence. That night all these women slipped over the side of the vessel and swam three miles to shore, at the behest, it was thought, of Guacanagari, who had paid much attention to the beautiful Catalina. Suspicions of the sincerity of this chieftain were now general.

Book Seven

Columbus now desired to seek a proper location for his projected colony. He weighed anchor and set sail, with the intention of reaching La Plata, but adverse winds compelled him to put into a harbor ten leagues from Monti Christi. The advantages of this site were soon apparent. The soil appeared fertile, the waters abounded in fish, the climate was temperate. Indians informed them, also, that the gold-bearing mountains of Cibao lay at no

-103-

the betade has been made and the fort minerized and captured without difficulty. The Fridudly capitors Guennegarie and als man and Fraght the invacing, but had been jut to route. Such was the talk fold C luminus.

More and the train of the days later of definition, when also with him a large train of the ended to be impressed with that that with all reserve the story of the observate thread with that that are as condition the tale, but an excepted of the villence allo see if the end that the tale, but an excepted if the villence allo see if the end that the tale, but an excepted if the daily much is and the confirm the tale, but an excepted if the daily much is and the confirm the tale, but an excepted if the daily much is and the confirm the transformer if the best weed and intervents the confirm the transformer at the day of the daily much is and the confirm the transformer at the day of the base of the second the confirm the transformer at the day of the base of the second the confirm the transformer at the day of the base of the second the confirm the transformer at the day of the transformer is then, neared constitute, way of unstand best of the versel and are aton and the stransformer at the base of the base of the versel and are then a store that the base of the base of the base of the versel and are aton and paid and constitute to the base of the base of the versel and are then allow as a store, at the base of the base of the base of the base of the second aton had paid all all the therefore a the base of the bas and the base of the base of the base of the base of the ba

Cook Sevan

Golumnus now desired to seek a propor location for his projected colors. He withhed inchar and set nell, with the intention of recebled in Plate, het adverse winds competied him to put into a hirbor ten loamues from homil Christik. The sevenceder of this site wire soon apparent. The soli sopeared fertile the vatera abounded in Tish, the climate was temperate. Los as informed. great distance inland. Columbus now disembarked his men. Provisions, guns and ammunition, domestic animals, implements of every kind, were soon landed. Streets and squares were laid out; a church, a public storehouse, and a house for the admiral were constructed of stone. Private houses were built of wood, which was everywhere abundant. The failure to find gold had discouraged many of the Spanish adventurers, and the hard labor necessary to colony-building resulted in much sickness. The worry and responsibility of commanding a large squadron wore upon Columbus himself and for several weeks he had to take to his bed. It was now necessary.to send back most of his vessels and his failure to find gold troubled him, for he knew that this failure would prejudice the sovereigns against him.

While the new settlement of Isabella was daily taking shape, Columbus sought for the gold which he knew the expedition was expected to discover. He sent a courageous and judicious adventurer, one Ojeda, into the interior to explore the mountains of the fierce chieftain Caonabo. The men of this expedition were not attacked and thought they saw ample signs of wealth. The sands of the mountain streams glittered with gold. Large specimens of virgin ore were picked up in river bottoms. Ojeda returned with enthusiastic accounts of the wealth of the country. Another cavalier, Gorvalan, who had been dispatched on a similar expedition to another section of the country, returned likewise with stories of gold to be had for the taking. Satisfied now that he was on the right path, Columbus now sent back twelve of the fleet to Spain, retaining five

-104-

preat Matanes Inland. Uslumbus now Lissmonraed his wer. Frontstans, sups and accountion, lowestic baimols, implementator even with, sere sood 1 aded. Streets and shares were leid out; a construct a stans, Frincis hauss were ould of another were construct a stans, Frincis hauss were ould of and the many of the Beatish edventurens, and the bard labor as started doion -builting readient of a state is and the bard labor as sets built as the line doine the state of a state is and the bard bard were as a veryshere soundant. The fathure to find gold has discources doion -builting readient and another bard the bard labor as setsary to applicate of communities in and all states and free and the statistics of communities a large squadrop she that to be find as the first of communities a large bard to be bard labor as setsary to applied with is saveral weaks he had to the bard labor. It was not set a very start to be the bard the bard bard bard bard bard and he downed has for he bard the bard bard with the first bard downed has for he bard the bard bard with a first bard downed bar he bard the bard bard with a first of find and he downed has bard the bard bard with a first of first bard downed has bard the bard the bard bard with bard bard bard and the downed has bard the bard the bard bard bard bard bard.

Maire the new sould send of issocile was held, buing sourfolgence sought for the gold shiph he has his expedition was evnoted to dissover. He sent a conversional and judicious adventions due 01sda, into the interfor to explore the monitains of the field and thought the sam apple signs of wealth. The same so the wandate through the sam apple signs of wealth. The same of the soundate through the sam apple signs of wealth. The same of the soundate through the sam apple signs of wealth. The same of the soundate through the sam apple signs of wealth. The same of the soundate of the sam apple signs of wealth. The same of the soundate through the sam apple signs of wealth. The same of the soundate the same apple of the same apple of the state of the sounds of the same apple of the state of the same of the sound of the termine, factories (jeds refurned with entitient deviation, or the termine, factories (jeds first he species of volu to be head or the termine, factories of the the same on the tight path. Coluor the same back the the the the same on the tight path. Colu-

-104-

ships. He also suggested that the revenue of Spain might be increased by enslaving the Caribs, and he begged for further supplies of food, much of which had been consumed, or had proved uneatable. Columbus sent a letter to the Spanish sovereigns in which he told of his conviction that gold was to be found in great quantities in the country. His information on this point was strengthened by the letters of other important persons who expressed similar views.

Columbus now had to encounter rebellion in addition to all his other difficulties. The Spaniards were jealous that a man whom they regarded as a foreigner had been given such authority. One Bernal Diaz de Pisa, who had come on the expedition as controller, plotted Columbus' overthrow. He was aided by Fermin Cedo, an assayer, who gave it as his official opinion that the country contained little or no gold.

Fortunately the plot was discovered before it could be put into execution. C_olumbus confined de Pisa on board one of his vessels to be sent to Spain for trial and punished the other plotters with great lenity. But his exhibition of authority raised a spirit of hatred against him which proved to be one of his greatest difficulties in administering the colony.

Columbus himself now led an expedition into the interior. He found traces of gold in the streams. Indians brought him nuggets of considerable size, with explanations that they had been found in the mountains. He built a mountain fortress which he named St. Thomas and garrisoned with fifty-six men under the

-105-

ships. He also suggested that the revenue of Spain might be inereased by englaving the Gariba, and he begach for farther suppiles of food, such of which had been consumed, or had proved unestable. Columbus sant a letter to the Spanish sovereigns in which he told of his conviction that gold was to be found in great quantities in the country. His information on this point was atrengthened by the lettere of other important persons who expressed shallar views.

--- 201--

Columnus now had to encounter rebellion in addition to all his other difficulties. The Spaniards were jealous that a man when they reserved as a foreigner had been given such authority. One fermal Dias de Fise, who had come on the expedition as controiler, plotted Columbus' overthrow. He was sided by Fergin Gedo, an desayer, who gave it as His official opinion that the country contained little or no gold.

Fortunately the plot was discovered before it could be pit into execution. C₀lumbus confined de Plas on board one of his vessels to be sent to Spain for trial and punished the other plotters with great lenity. But his exhibition of authority raised a spirit of natred against him which proved to be one of his greatest difticulties in addinictering the colony.

Columbus himself now ded an expedition into the interior. He found truces of gold in the streams. Indians brought him muggets of considerable size, with explanations that they had been found in the mountains. He built a mountain fortress which he hamed St. Thouse and garrisoned with fifty-six wen under the command of Pedro Magarite. He had revised his ideas of the peaceability of the natives of Hispianola and thought it prudent to be prepared for any treachery. Satisfied that the interior did possess gold, he returned to Isabella.

The colony appeared to be prospering, but disease soon again appeared. Near-by marshes caused what was undoubtedly malaria and men died by scores. Venereal disease also made its appearance from contact with the native women. Supplies daily became less, until it became necessary to put the colony upon short rations. Many Spanish nobles resented this necessary restriction as a personal affront and the feeling against Columbus increased. The necessity of labor, too, was little understood by many of these proud Spaniards, who had not expected to be called upon for such work when they had joined the expedition. To make matters worse, Magarite, who commanded the fort of St. Thomas, sent word that the natives were hostile in their attitude and that he feared an attack.

Columbus now prepared for a voyage of exploration to Cuba, but before his departure he sent an army of some four hundred men, with some cavalry, which the Indians especially feared, under the command of de Ojeda, who was to replace Margarite in command of the fort at St. Thomas.

The voyage to Cuba was singularly unproductive. Contact with the natives resulted in the usual vague references to goldthis time to the southward-but little else. Nevertheless he was in many ways especially delighted with Cuba. He was convinced

-106-

command of fedro Magarite, he had revised his ideas of the peace solity of the matives of Minpianole and thought it predent to be prepared for any treachery. Matisfied that the interior did cossess cold. As returned to Isabelia.

The solary appeared to be preserving, but direases soon and a preserve. Near-by murius appased what may undershally salarit and wan died by ecores. Venereal dialise size wide like appeared. The context with the untive women. Surplies dediy becaus lead, until it regime near my to get the colony upon about rations. Many Spanish noules resented this recensive tonative vice as a personal aftrant in the feeling stained tolunthe introduction as a personal aftrant in the feeling stained tolunative vice and. The neares when the feeling stained tolunthe introduction as a personal aftrant in the feeling stained tolunative interests. The neares which the feeling stained to a spedition. To mate another worke, Magorith, who commented the fordition. To mate any the test the near the period of the fordition. To mate another worke, Magorith, who commented the fordition and that no faced and the interpered to the for-

Columns our properted for a voyage of exploration to duit, but before his departure to sont an error of some four hundred man, with same causing, thick the indiana especially feared, wher the command of de Ojeda, who can be replace Margarite in coverned of the fort at 50. Gomes,

The version to the real in all white the unproduction Contact sits the netives real ted in the usual wayse references to goidthis then to the nou-inverte-tet 1 tills also. Novertheless he was in many ways appoindly delighted with dube. He was convinced

=106+

that in sailing along the coast of Cuba he was in reality skirting the coast of Asia. So sure was he of this that he required every member of his ship's crew to make oath that he believed he had seen the coast of Asia.

Book Eight

Upon his return to Isabella, Columbus was overjoyed to find his brother Bartholomew, who had been given command of the supply ships from Spain. During his absence rebellion had again shown itself. Margarite had taken his forces to another part of the country than ordered by Columbus and had treated the natives so harshly as to bring down the condemnation of Don Diego Columbus. He resented this criticism and defied Don Diego. He aroused the discontented nobles, aided much by Friar Boyle, seized several ships in the harbor, and departed for Spain. The cacique Caonabo had also taken advantage of Columbus' absence and had laid siege to the fort of St. Thomas. Ojeda had defended it with great skill and bravery and, after a protracted siege, had driven off the Indians. The disappointed cacique now planned an Indian confederacy to drive out the Spaniards. He succeeded in gaining four chieftains as allies, but failed to secure the cooperation of Guacanagari, against whom suspicions proved unfounded.

Columbus sent military expeditions into the territory of these hostile chiefs, before they could make their concerted attack upon Isabella, and put them to route with great slaughter. Ojeda now offered to capture the redoutable Caonabo by stratagem and went with ten men to the village of the cacique,

-107-

the had seen the court of are to make a the thir failte all to the seller all the termine and the termined he had be the seller of all the held and the termine he had a seen the court of all.

JUNTS FOOR

Upon the roturn to leabells, folumbur was averyoned to find the 'rother Barthalogen, who had been given dommand of the smooly blace from Josin. During the choice rebellion had again shown ithelf. 'Regaribe had teron all formes to another plant of the country than ordered by Columbus and had trusted the natives been allowed by Columbus and had trusted the natives the demonship at to bring four this confermation of the half was been demonship at to bring four this confermation of the height of the discontented nobles, affectuare by Frier Brile, Beined acteral ship in the barbor, and beauted for found in The scolard data also had the tribut of the muched for found and had infinite the barbor, and fermited for found and had data also have barbor, and defier of domands had defined had data also have the barbor, and fermited for found and had off the Testate. The disappointed confere along the had drant ship in the barbor, and alter a protiented alonge the had domand also have barbor and, after a protiented alonged to drive off the Testate. The disappointed conferes now planted an indinear conference the four box four along an indicated and ship in the barbor, but the spaniards. He associate the account of four objections as allies, but felled to secure the account to four objections as allies, but felled to decure the account of

Columnar and military expedibions into the territory of these basile chiefs, before they could make their cancerted states when latbells, and not them to route with creat elaughtor. Oleds now offered to espture the redentable deamabo by strateger and went with ten non to the village of the catego.

- 101-

who received him peacefully, out of his great admiration for him. Ojeda bribed him to come to Isabella to make a peace treaty with Columbus, promising him the church bell, which he greatly coveted. He started upon the journey with a great multitude of followers. To get rid of these Ojeda resorted to trickery. He showed him a pair of glittering steel manacles, described them as ornaments of a king, and promised to place them on the wrists of the chief and to let him ride his own horse. Caonabo permitted him to adjust the bracelets, mounted behind Ojeda and was carried from the midst of his protecting army, who were powerless to catch the fleet steeds of the Spaniards. The Indians now ceased their attacks upon the Spaniards.

The arrival of four new supply ships from Spain cheered the colony greatly. The ships also bore messages from Ferdinand and Isabella commending Columbus for his administration of the colony and expressing their confidence in him. Columbus, knowing that Margarite and Friar Boyle had powerful friends in Spain, now decided to send his brother Don Diego to protect his interests at court. He made every effort to send a large supply of gold and various valuable plants and fruits, and he added five hundred Indian prisoners to be sold as slaves. The supply ships departed almost immediately for Spain.

Columbus now had to face another coalition against him. News was brought that a vast army of Indians, estimated at as many as a hundred thousand, was within two day's march of Isabella. The admiral marshalled his little army, two hundred infantry and

-108-

An repeired him respectivity, out of his grant admiration for him. Oleda brides him to comp to largestle ho make a proce trant with folymbre, oremiting him the omiran bell, which he greatly coveted, he matched upon the Journey with a great multiture of followers. To get rid of these Oleda resorted to brighery, he enoused him a pair of gittering steel annaolen, described than a practice the original start of the promised to place them on the wrist and the original to let him ride with original or start an the original start of gittering steel annaolen, described than of the original to let him ride with own normal the art the original to let him ride with own normal the art the original to let him ride with own normal the art the start of his protecting area, who were powerload to her starts the instruction of the basis of the halfane new reason determines the Startarts.

The armival of four new supply shire from Guain andered the dolong greatly. The subor also have madesges from servinand and leagells commenting folumbus for his wishingstration of the pollon, but more value their confidence in the foluming, mission when the server in the frier boule had four rule. foluming, mission, no about a server's and the brother bon Diego to protect his interests, at court. He made every effort to cend a lines supply of gold and vertous veluable plants and follows, and he added five human indication friends and follows. The supply of gold and vertous veluable plants and follows. The supply of gold indicating for and as slaves. The supply ships departs aloost is mediately for spain.

- Columnus now had to face another coalition sgainet that we was brought that a vact firm, of indiana, satimated at as namy a a bundred booksand, was within the day's march of Isaballa. The scaled merapelled his little stay, two hundred infactory and twenty horse, under the command of his brother Bartholomew. He had with him a number of bloodhounds. He divided his little army into several squadrons, each of which was to attack the enemy from a different quarter. The Indiana quickly gave way under an impetuous cavalry charge under Ojeda, whose armored horsemen proved irresistable. The dogs seized the natives by the throat, pinned them to earth, and disemboweled them. European weapons and methods of warfare again proved too much for native courage and another native uprising was successfully put down.

Columbus the admiral now became Columbus the conqueror. He divided Hispaniola into districts and demanded tribute from each cacique and his followers. In the gold districts of the island each cacique had to bring to Isabella every three months half a calabash of gold dust, while each Indian had to furnish the equivalent of a hawk's bell full of gold. In territory where no gold was to be found, each individual had to furnish twentyfive pounds of cotton every three months. To enforce his demands, Columbus strengthened his chain of forts across the island.

Margarite and Friar Boyle, upon their arrival in Spain, at once set about discrediting Columbus. They accused him of oppressing the colonists, by requiring excessive labor and denying them necessary food. They maintained that Hispaniola was of little value as a colony and that it possessed little gold. They also criticised the absence of the admiral upon his Cuban and Jamaican expeditions, insisting that his presence was needed in the colony. These representations, often made through influ-

-109-

bready have, under the commund of his brother hyptholones. He has with him a number of bloodhounds, He divided his little and into eaveral squadrone, each of which was to astack the enery from a differint quarter. The fullent quickly gave way under a deservoir advantity charge under Oleda, whose crossed by the thready browed irrebiately. The dage saled the netives up the thready planed there to earth, and diserboweist the netives up watgot and methods of sariar again prived too mail for anity courses and methods of sariar again prived too mail for anity out again

Goludors the schirel now broams Columns the conqueror. We divided Mapanick into districts and reasoned tribute from such called and the followers. In the gold districts of the Salad and sade end to bring to imbells every three months well a calebach of gold last, while each Indian had to furnish the sobivators of sold last, while each Indian had to furnish as a calebach of sold last, while each Indian had to furnish the sobivators of sold last, while each Indian had to furnish the sobivators of sold last, while each Indian had to furnish the sobivators of sold last, while each Indian had to furnish the sold was to to found; each Individual had to furnish leavy. fire pounds of coldon every have achieve to an order he laman a fire pounds of coldon every have achieve to be the folgoid.

Mersarite and Friar Boyle, upon their arrival in 31 ain.

et once det soodt diverediting Columnus. Cher soonsed nim et oppressing the coloniste, bi requiring excessive liber and den ing ades requester food. Mass autorined that Etspulcie sau e little value as a colony and that it nonessed little gold. The situe orthicized the absence of the somessed little gold. The startes appenditions, fasisting that his presence was needed in the colony. These representations, class his presence was needed in the colony. These representations, class his presence was needed

ential friends at court, and the jealousy of the foreign birth of C_olumbus, influenced Ferdinand and Isabella. The King determined to send an emissary to investigate the true state of affairs. Ferdinand also granted permission to Spanish navigators to explore and colonize at their own expense, an act which Columbus resented as an infringement upon his own priviliges.

The timely arrival of the supply ships under Torres did much, however, to correct the unfavorable court attitude toward Columbus. Torres reported his safe return to the colony and indicated the supposed discovery of the Asiatic coast, which was received with acclaim. Juan Aguado was appointed as the King's representative to visit the colony, an appointment which it was thought would not antagonize the admiral, as he had recommended him highly to the severeigns. Isabella decided that the Indian prisoners should be returned to their native land and not held as slaves.

Aguado's appointment completely turned his head. Upon his arrival at Isabella he conducted himself as if he had superceded Columbus himself. The complaints of every malcontent were listened to with entire credence and the report spread all over the island that another admiral had been appointed. Columbus returned to face Aguado, who tried to anger him into some disrespect of the sovereigns, but failed utterly. The admiral now realized that he was needed in Spain to defend his own interests and he determined to return. As they were about to sail, a tropical hurricane descended upon the island, wrecked all four of Aguada's ships and

-110-

ential friends at court, and the jealoner of the foreign outh of C₀ lumbus, influenced Ferdinand and leabells. The King determ ad to wond an emissary to investigate the true state of strairs. Fordinand also granted permission to Spanish navigators to axplore and odionize at their own expense, an set which ddiumbus reconted as an infrincement wood is gown arivilized.

The timesy arrival of the sumiy ships under Forres did anoth, however, to correct the uniavorable court stateme tossed dolumbus. Forres reported in suferentiate court stateme tossed didged the memores disorder of the refute tosset, which was received with acclute tone sease we appointed as the ting's representative to "late the selent, an arraintman, which it was thought would not anticourse the same seaters, so he had recommended his highly to the severetary. Instein a land and the instant prisonare should be returned to their native tand and not had

Aquado's appointment completely tormed bis hous. Upon his arrival at leabells be conducted himself as if he had superconsed Columns himself. The completite of every malcontent were listered to with antire credence and the report apread all over the liland that another eduiral had been appointed. Columnus returned to face Aguado, who third to angot him into some disrespect of the sovereigne, but falled utterly. The admiral new realized that he was needed in Spain to Gefend his own interests and he deteration to return, as they were about to sail, a tropical hurricane athed to return, as they were about to sail, a tropical hurricane

-0110-

two of the admiral's. The Nina alone remained and she required much rebuilding to fit her for sea. The delay proved of value to C'lumbus, as it resulted in the discovery of the mines of Hayna. This mine proved richer than any yet discovered and Columbus was delighted to be able to return with such tidings to the court of Spain.

Book Nine

After a weary voyage of three months, during which time Columbus and his followers were often threatened with starvation, the admiral reached the Bay of Cadiz. Columbus was received with kindness by Ferdinand and Isabella, somewhat to his surprise. They were favorable to his request for eight new ships to undertake another voyage of exploration. But Spain was under great expense at this time. A war with France threatened. A Spanish expedition even then was engaged in the capture of Naples. The princess Juana was to be married to the Archduke of Austria, which entailed unusual expense. Just as the necessary money was about to be turned over to Columbus, Pedro Nino returned from Isabella with much gold, as he informed Ferdinand by letter. The King now spent the money designed for Columbus upon the repair of the fortress of Salza, which had been sacked by the French, planning to finance Columbus' expedition with the gold brought by Nino. This sum, however, turned out to be purely imaginary. Nino had merely brought Indian prisoners to be sold as slaves.

The usual delays and intrigues delayed Columbus in his preparations for his third voyage. Fonseca, Bishop of Badajos, was

-111-

two of the schirel's. The Mine alone remained and the required much repuilting to fit her for sea. The delay proved of value to "lumbur, as it candided in the discovery of the wined of Eayns. This wine proved ricker than any yot discovered and dolo bus was delighted to be able to return rith such tidings to the court of Spain.

ange shoet

willer a very starte and the month, during willow the Columnus and his followers were often throntonic hith starvation, the scales respired the one of Cadim. Collabors was received rithme bill of semeoure, alledard has baselinve (u as one will bill They word favorania to his request for eight new abing to only tale another you age of exploration. But Spain was unlar great atexe nainegt & .benedewild scherig dilt max a .emit clarite oxe that to be turned even to Columbus. Faire 11nd retained from of the follows of Salas, mains had been acked by the French, planting to finance Columbus! excedition with the gold brought by Winds. Sois ada, however, turped out to be purely instituty. ". 10 dae merely brought indian quierenesto be anguits aleves." parations for his third voyage. Forseca, History of Hadajos, 740

+ Brile

chief of the bureau of Indian affairs and he was the inveterate enemy of the navigator. Such was the difficulty of securing new colonists for Isabella that criminals were enlisted and the poorest type of colonist imaginable secured, when men of honesty and ambition were most needed. But at last, on the thirteenth of May, 1498, Columbus set sail on his third voyage of discovery.

The admiral decided to sail by a different route from that followed on any of his other voyages. He intended to sail directly westward until he should find himself in the neighborhood of Hispaniola. He had come to believe that if he sailed to the neighborhood of the equator he would find land richer in the precious metals. His opinion had been strengthened by a letter from Jayne Ferrer, an eminent lapidar, who had written him at the instance of the Queen. On the thirteenth of July he found himself in the fifth degree of north latitude, a region which is noted for its calms and intense heat. His men suffered greatly from the extreme heat, the seams of the ships softened, provisions spoiled, while the supply of water diminished alarmingly. On the thirty-first of July he discovered the island of Trinidad, when each vessel had only one cask of water remaining.

Book Ten

In his explorations Columbus found himself in the Gulf of Paria, where his little fleet was nearly overwhelmed by a hugh tidal wave. After great difficulty he came in contact with the Indians, who wore golden ornaments of an inferior kind, consisting of an alloy of gold, silver and copper. But many of them

-112-

abled of the Europe of Social affairs and he was the involvente each of the herigator. Such must her difficulty of erguing net coloniets of solelle-cast contained ware emigrade and the photset type of coloniet to gime de second, when any of herests and antitles acts most needed. But at last, on the thirdeadt of sol, the the thirdeadt of sole of her at a the thirdeadt of sol.

The remains terified to calk by a different route from the followed on any of his other sequence. We intended to said direct a produced with the instruction of his direct induction of the second of the property is the property in the property is the property in the property is the property is the property is the property of the second of the property is the property is the property is the property of the second of the

nor sicol

In the explorations Columban forma hubbelt in the Galf of Faria, where his little float was nearly overwalled by a such tidal mare. After great difficulty is used in convect with the Indiana, why whe golden ormanents of an inferior time, canatet 10g of an alloy of fold, silver and cosper. But way of them wore bracelets of pearl about their arms and this seemed to open up a new avenue of wealth.

The hardships of the voyage had greatly weakened Columbus. His eyesight was so bad that he could no longer take his own observations. He was wracked by the gout and weakened by long hours of watchfulness. He decided, therefore, to make at once for Isabella.

Don Bartholmew, leaving his brother Don Diego in command of Isabella, obeyed Columbus' order to construct a fort during his absence in Spain. This fort commanded a district about the newly discovered mines. Not able to secure enough provisions to support a large body of men, he left a small garrison and next proceeded, as Columbus had directed, to establish a town on the Ozema, which it was hoped would prove to be a valuable seaport. He erected a fort to protect the seaport, which he named San Domingo, the site of the Haytian city of that name to-day.

Don Bartholomew next invaded the district about the Xaragua, which was governed by a cacique named Behechio. This district was the most fertile of any on the island and the Indians there were of a superior type. At first Behechio was inclined to resent the arrival of the Spanish expedition, but Bartholomew explained that he intended no harm, but was merely the representative of the Spanish sovereigns. He made clear the need of tribute, to which Behechio agreed, when he found that it could be paid in cotton, hemp, and cassava bread, as he had no gold.

There was constant difficulty at Isabella during the absence

-113-

nego of homone that the arms sheld that have to thissonic entry

The secteding of the voyage ind greatly maximum following. All evening is as and that he could no four take his own atcorvations. He was aracked by the good and workeds toy long hours of vetobhalmess. He doolded, there for, to rake at case for lange

Don Bartholmer, leaving his motion for blogs in schmann of toshells, stayed Goldshis' order to usestruct a fort wring his soundes in mean. This fort somewhild a district slow the newly discovered zines. Not and to a size slow here if in the analy a large hole of ask, of lark a cost of sheld and that divideds, a dalcable had alrested, to ask biller a time in the firsteds, the was hoped sould prove to as a filler to around a district divided a first to protect the seaport, which he mines for younge, the filler the top settion of the new to-day here in the destrone, he she to be destriant ally of the new to-day here in the filler to the settion of the seaport, which he mines for country, the filler ally

The new governed by a catton the distribution don't the Karagai. A is not fortile of any of the island and the indiana there was a superior type. As first behavior was indiana bound that the is with a was guared by any of the island and the indiana the or the appendent type. As first behavior was indiana bounders the is with a was guared closefully, but Bartos boars arginized that he is appendixe, he made closefully the respect tables, to which banced appendixes, he made close the used of tribute, to which banced are search as an a bar of the search of the search of the second are search to a found that is and of the search of the second are search as an a bar of the search of the search of the second are search as a search of a search of the search of the second are search as a search of the search of the second of the second are search as a search of the search of the second of the second are search as a search of the search of the second of the second are search as a search of the search of the second of the second are search as a search of the search of the second of the second are search as a search of the search of the second of the second are search as a search of the search of the second of the second are search as a search of the search of the second of the second are search as a search of the search of the second of the second of the second are search as a search of the second of the

and a man a marginal is vitability dimian a sam aren

of the admiral. The colonists complained that he had forgotten them. The arrival of supplies from Spain helped the situation only temporarily and soon the colonists had to depend upon the country again. The location of the town seems to have been illchosen and the inhabitants had to contend with constant illness. The admiral and his two brothers were never regarded by the Spaniards as one of themselves, but as foreigners to whom they must pay unwilling obedience.

Book Eleven

The disaffection of the Spanish colonists at Isabella burst into open rebellion during the absence of Columbus. Don Bartholomew was on an expedition in the interior and had left the command with his brother, Don Diego. The leader of the rebellion was Roldan, a man of little education, but of unusual energy and natural ability. Columbus had advanced him to the position of alcalde mayor, or chief judge of the island, subordinate only to Don Diego. Roldan believed Columbus to have lost the confidence of the Spanish sovereigns. He stirred up the colonists by telling them of their wrongs, until he had persuaded them to conspire against the life of Don Diego himself. A friend of Roldan's, one Berahona, had been condemned to death for the rape of an Indian woman. The plan of the conspirators was to stab Don Diego in the midst of a simulated tumult when the populace was gathered in the square to witness the execution. Unfortunately for Roldan, Don Diego pardoned the man, so the opportunity was lost.

When the caraval returned from Xaragua laden with Indian tribute, the vessel was drawn up on land for safety. Roldan

-114-

or the doulest. The colonities from Health holosi the adviction them. The arrival of Expedies from Health holosi the altration only componently and soon the colonible her to depend upon the containy spain. The location of his bown seems to have been 111obseen and the location of his content with constant lines. The eduiral and its two brothous sore never regarded by the loca lards as one of themesives, but as for igners to when they such tards as one of themesives, but as for igners to when they such pay smalling checkeds.

Bovall Mont

the distribution of the spanish colouists at indepin out Into open rebellion du elne the source of Columnus. Non Burthole -des ond that the has notional and al nottlborra de he are vome nailinder and lo rehar . Don Diene. An leader of the pebollion was halden, a man of little education, but of man a mabine new of alaside mayor, or object heige of the faland, subordinate and the Dam Dieges dallage baysived Columbus to mere last the a staindlos al the bowrids of .scalet vot dolasts and to constit balling block of bawle america, which has he may make a same we's dire antheb the life of non Steve bleesh a fielded of Rollin's one Serebara, bad heen conderned to death for the race of an Indien woman. The plan of the concentrators was to plan There here and a set and lot a similar them the solution was gauged in "Los to viersmithe int andituders and asandir of engine one at dan, for blace pardonal the sam, on the opportunity was the

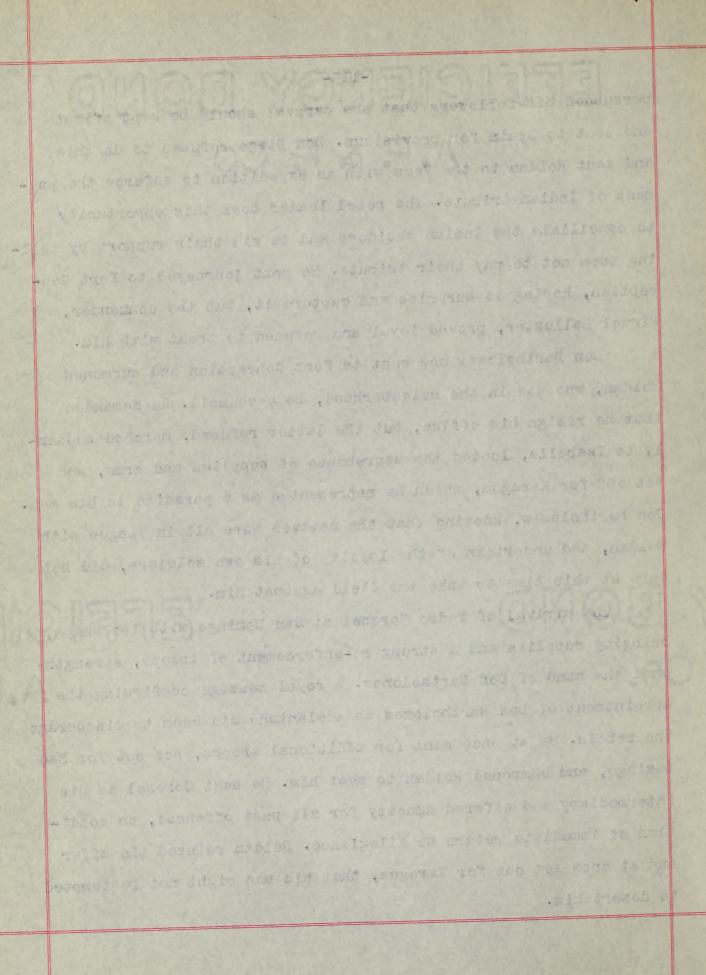
unally .vester yet has ine on mane say Ioener say .educiti

persuaded his followers that the caraval should be kept afloat and sent to Spain for provisions. Don Diego refused to do this and sent Roldan to the Vega with an expedition to enforce the payment of Indian tribute. The rebel leader took this opportunity to conciliate the Indian caciques and to win their support by telling them not to pay their tribute. He next journeyed to Fort Conception, hoping to surprise and capture it, but the commander, Miguel Ballester, proved loyal and refused to treat with him.

Don Bartholomew now went to Fort Conception and summoned Roldan, who was in the neighborhood, to a council. He demanded that he resign his office, but the latter refused, marched suddenly to Isabella, looted the storehouse of supplies and arms, and set off for Xaragua, which he represented as a paradise to his men. Don Bartholomew, knowing that the natives were all in league with Roldan, and uncertain of the loyalty of his own soldiers, did not dare at this time to take the field against him.

The arrival of Pedro Coronel at San Domingo with two ships, bringing supplies and a strong re-enforcement of troops, strengthened the hand of Don Bartholomew. A royal message confirming the appointment of Don Bartholomew as adelantado did much to discourage the rebels. He at once sent for additional troops, set out for San Domingo, and summoned Roldan to meet him. He sent Coronel as his intermediary and offered amnesty for all past offences, on condition of immediate return to allegiance. Roldan refused the offer and at once set out for Xaragua, that his men might not be tempted to desert him.

-115-



The disaffected natives were being marshalled for an attack upon Fort Conception. Through an error, one cacique attacked before the agreed time, was repulsed, and thus put the Spanish on their guard. Don Bartholomew now led his army into the mountains of Ciguay to capture the rebellious chief Guarionex, who had headed the conspiracy. He was sheltered by another cacique, Mayobanex, who refused to give him up. After a long time and an arduous campaign the two chiefs were captured by stratagem and the rebellious Indians were forced to renew their allegiance.

Irving paints a vivid picture of the conditions which Columbus found upon his return to Hispaniola after his long absence in Spain. The colonists had never cultivated the soil to any extent to put themselves upon a self-supporting basis. Most of them rejected the idea of manual labor as beneath the dignity of a Spaniard. Many of the provinces now lay desolate and deserted, the Indians having fled to the hills. At Isabella, public works lay uncompleted, while idle men quarreled among themselves or mutinied against authority.

Roldan had now taken possession of Xaragua. Three caravals appeared off the coast. The rebel leader boarded them, pretending to be stationed in the neighborhood to collect tribute from the natives. They proved to be the three ships detached by Columbus at the Canary Islands to bring supplies to the colonists. Roldan commandeered supplies and amunition by virtue of his official position. Finally Carvajal, captain of one of the caravals, discovered that Roldan was in rebellion, endeavored to dissuade

-116-

The distification natives were teing as remained for an attack upon fort fonception. Through an epror, one easings ation of before the agrood tice, was repulsed, and thus put the agest tains of distart. Son Herizolones now led his army into the mountains of distart to capture the rebellious entel Guarionex, and had bested the constitue. He was areleted by another overlaps, dayopaues, whe refused to give his are cheller a long time and ar arduous campaign the two ontels were subtared by distance and arduous campaign the two ontels were captured by distance and be rebellious Indiana were forced to renew that allogiance.

Columbran found upon this recturn to dispendious after the long sosense in Spain. The colonists had never cultivated the soil to any extent to put themselves upon a sulf-supporting basis. Fost of them rejected the dass of manual labor as beneath the dignit of a Spantard. (any of the provinces now is denotate and descri ed, the Tatiana having fied to the bijls. At issue the public acris isy uncompleted, while the energy of marrelpi source to or sutinied against support by.

Rolden had now (rand roitowalow of Marages. These days all appeared off the domain. The rebail bester bounded than, pretending to be stationed in the net observed to collect tribute tree the matives. They proved to be the three shipe istacled by Sole:bus at the damany islands to bring supplies to the colorists. Alfan commandered sepplies and spunition by virthe of his colorists. cial position. Figally Jarvaisi, captain of one of the converse,

-116-

him from his purpose, and finally put him ashore and proceeded to Isabella.

Book Twelve

Columbus himself now decided upon more rigorous measures. He issued a proclamation offering free passage to all those who wished to return to Spain. This, he hoped, would free the colony of men who had proved their unfitness to be there. He also sent Ballester, commandant of Fort Conception, to treat with Roldan, authorizing him to offer pardon to the rebel leader. The latter treated the offer with contempt and demanded the release of certain slaves, captured Indians who had refused to pay tribute, as he knew that he could give his rebellion the appearance of legitimacy by appearing to fight for the vindication of the Indians.

Unable to take the field with his disaffected troops, Columbus knew that he must temporize and decided to send the ships back to Spain at once. He prepared a chart of his recent discoveries in the Gulf of Para, sent specimens of gold and pearls, and wrote an enthusiastic letter descriptive of the wealth of this newly discovered continent. Roldan and his friends also sent letters to influential friends in Spain, complaining of their treatment by the admiral and detailing the sufferings of the colonists. Columbus now met Roldan at San Domingo, but the demands of the rebels were so impossible of acceptance that nothing came of the meeting. Finally, through Carvajal, an agreement was reached. Roldan was to be permitted to send fifteen of his followers to Spain. Those who remained were to be granted land instead of the pay

-117-

his from his purpose, and finally put his ashere and proceeded t

BATSMI TAGTAR

The instands of the first of the first paragaps to all those the sisted to return to that of a first paragaps to all those the of men who had proved their unitares to be there. Is define and ballester, commanded of and their unitares to be there. Is define and ballester, commanded of and their unitares to be there. Is define and ballester, commanded of and the ball of ball of the first to be the offer with achieved to the ball of the related of gentrested the offer with achieved the first of the related of gentain sized of the total of the first had being be appreciated of legit the knew sint he could give his relation the the related of legit the tree of the first of the the total of the first of the first the tree of the total of the the total of the first of the first the tree of the total of the the total of the first of the first the tree of the total of the the total of the first of the first the tree of the total of the total of the first of the first the tree of the total of the the total of the first of the first the tree of the total of the total of the first of the first of the first theory by spread the total for the first of the first of the legit.

ous imer that he must taun the ont heided to sont the Shipe back to Spein it once. He mentions a chart of his recent discoveries in the Cuil of Fare, eent speciaens of gold and parelo, and what an entimatestic letter succriptive of the weakh of thio newlo discovered continent. Solden and his friends also eent idther to influential friends in Souls, completening of their treatment by his schning and retailing the cuf srings of the dening of the delumine now not holden at Man Bonings, but the deminds of the refers were no imponators of acceptance that cothing asks of the delumine now not holden at Man Bonings, but the deminds of the refers were no imponators of acceptance that cothing asks of the delumine to be permitted to cend fithers of his following to the data were to be permitted to cend fithers of his following to the data were to be permitted to cend fithers is instant of the following to the data were no remained here to be presided is in the following to the data were no remained here to be presided is in the following to the data were no remained here to be presided is in the following to the data were no remained wore to be gravited is and instead of the out

-177-

which was in arrears. All testimony against them was to be declared false. Roldan himself was to be re-instated without prejudice in his old position of chief judge of the island. Columbus accepted these harsh terms because he must, but with the mental reservation that he would by letter or in person explain to the sovereigns the necessity of granting such terms to the rebels. Roldan now conducted himself with greater discretion, as he felt that he had gained much and must prove his loyalty to remain in possession of his new wealth.

Book Thirteen

Irving depicts with clearness and understanding the final chapter in the downfall of Columbus. Every vessel that returned to Spain brought disaffected men who hesitated at no calumny in their effort to discredit the admiral. The fact that he was a foreigner was constantly brought against him, and he was even accused of an intention to cast off allegiance to the Spanish crown. His enemies used one incontestable fact, which had great weight with Ferdinand, to injure the admiral. Was it not true, they asserted, that the colonies were a constant source of expense, instead of yielding the expected revenue? How could the glowing accounts of Columbus be true when compared with that fact? This argument influenced Ferdinand greatly, for constant wars had drained his treasury and he had hoped that the revenue of his new lands would offset this great expense. Returned colonists clamored for the pay which they said had been denied them by Columbus.

-118-

which was in arrears. All continues whatest them and to be be beause as faise. Poldan Himself whe to be re-instanced without arcingles in his old to be bind that is the stand. Solutions accorded these hares terms bounded in must, but with the mental recent be the pessently of printing and the person explain to the second us of the pessently of granting and the constant, and the recent is the pessently of granting and the constant, and the recent is action that he would be letter or in person explain to the second us the pessently of granting and the constant, and he is and the here occanoe ment with greater discretion, as he felt that he had detend and and prove all loyalty to remain in possention of air of white.

-211-

Bais Bais He soce

Living applets when desympts in information that the first obspace is the formfall of following, there, which that the first to Spain arought filefformed to be minimale and an her officers to their effort to dimensite the minimal. The first her me over connect of an intention to that off alloying to be an around accounted of an intention to the stained her, and he was ever accounted of an intention to the stained her, which her are to they exactly the member area on a intention fact, which her area accounted of an intention to the stained her, which her area they accounts the rest of a finite the stained her and the the they accounts of the intention area a constant source of acpense, theread of fields the accounts the restance of her finite argument influenced ferd'rant around the interval drained his thereary and he has house that the restance of his drained his thereary and he has house their actions are a state and the interval of her allow the state area is a state of the state the constant of her is drained his thereary and he has house the state of his drained his thereary and he has house the best and an is a state and the the state of his drain area around a state area is and and of the the state of her account and drained her the the state the around the hermanic of his

Isabella, who had always favorably regarded Columbus and his projects, was aroused by the fact that Indian slaves continued to arrive by every vessel, and that Columbus himself recommended that Indians who refused to pay tribute should be enslaved, in spite of her known antagonism to such procedure. Ferdinand finally decided to send an emissary to investigate conditions in Hispaniola, though he delayed this action for almost a year before he put it into execution. He chose Don Francisco de Bobadilla, an officer of the royal household, for this delicate mission. He gave him several letters patent, which were to be used in varying conditions at his discretion. The first letter provided for an investigation of the rebellion and gave de Bobadilla power to try the rebels and to punish them if he saw fit. The second letter gave his emissary power to exile any Spaniards whose presence on the island he thought inimical to the administration of good government. The third letter, to be used only if de Bobadilla found that Columbus had exceeded his authority or had badly administered the government, required the admiral to turn over all government property to the King's representative.

Bobadilla arrived at Isabella on the twenty-third of August during the absence of the admiral. A boat put out from shore to discover the identity of the new arrivals and soon the rumour that the King had sent an official to investigate the conduct of Columbus was broadcast. Every disaffected Spaniard who thought it wise to ingratiate himself with Bobadilla found occasion to visit the vessel and recount his grievances to him. The presence of two

-119-

-011ina spatzloc bebrapet clibrovel aperla ien oim .clibber As revised a real and the fact the fact that a large the third the printing function we set and that for and that function for the in spice of her known astagonian to such procedury. Feidingnd to Mispariala, though he delayed bills sollon for windet & year dilla, an officer of the royal Sousenoid, for this delicate minbeau at of ever him several latian inten which were to is used in varying condicions at his discretion. The first laties provid only it? and of 11 hous deland of the effort out yes of there whone a survive on the 101 and he thought initiated to the emitters tration of good nov inneret. The shird letter, to be used only if to patronaup win Sebsepassied endaulob sech bauo' ellis del eb to isting add publices , treastanters, treastante abe adding to Luca avon all covermonter respirate to the fing's more contained. To waiting a miner of the set of the anti-set is a straight at the donted the absence of the somirel. A boat put out from shore to discover the foodity of the new strivals and coon the repour Dat the fine iss sant an official to investigate the conduct of Columbus wis breakest. Every disaffacted Spatiant who thaught it wis ressel and recount his grievances to him. The pressing of but dead Spaniards in chains at the entrance of the harbor confirmed Bobadilla in his opinion of undue severity in the administration of the government. He had already formed an opinion of the culpability of Columbus before he had even landed or conversed with Don Diego, who was the authority in charge.

The next morning Bobadilla landed, went to church to attend mass, and then addressed the populace gathered about to witness his arrival. He caused his first letter to be proclaimed as proof of his royal authority, and then demanded the persons of all the prisoners confined in the fort. Don Diego replied that only the admiral had authority to release them, as his authority was superior to that of Bobadilla. The next morning he again landed, assumed those powers which Ferdinand had intended him to assume only after an investigation of Columbus' administration and conviction of his culpability, and took the oath by which he assumed the governorship of the islands and of Terra Firma.Don Diego admitted the authority of the sovereigns, but still refused to give up the prisoners. To gain the good will of the populace, Bobadilla now caused to be read the King's letter authorizing him to pay all wages in arrears. He threatened to take the prisoners by force, if they were not released. Appearing before the fort, he summoned the commandant Miguel Diaz to surrender. Upon his refusal, he gathered his little band of retainers and a rabble of townspeople and forced the gate of the fort. He met with no resistence whatever and triumphantly proclaimed his victory.

With this rather anti-climatic incident Irving brings his

-120-

dead Spaniands in chains at the saturade of the harbor confirmed Sobalilie in his crimion of indua severity in the administration of the government. He had sire dy found in opinion of the outnability of Columbus before he had even impled or conversed site Con Disgo, who was the authority in charge.

The next sporting Bobanille Innied, went to church to even prinoners confined in the fort. Con Diess replied that offer de An aqua ant authority to reloune them. an his authority was superrior to that of Boundilly. The nort downlog be deat of going religivant and noiderdeiniabe devinuito to tolterideeval as reite rovernorship of the islands and of Terra Firm. Don Hisgo similitat the autionity of the soverelian, but atill refered to give up the prisoners. To cale the Lood will of the populace, JobEdilla you of all guilinedue resiel a ania and have as bounded won for an it they were not relaxed. Appenting before the fort, he To alidar a bru arenister To busi elitit ale hereijag ed . Isaul townspacele and forced the rate of the forty He mat with no resistence whatever and triunghantly producined his victory.

-120-

narrative of the life and voyages of Columbus to a conclusion.

CRITICAL ESTIMATE OF THE "LIFE AND VOYAGES OF COLUMBUS"

Washington Irving was ideally fitted to undertake the writing of a history of Christopher Columbus and his voyages of discovery. As an historical-minded and unusually intelligent American, he was deeply interested in the personality of the man who had been so instrumental in the discovery of his country. As a resident of long standing in various European countries he had acquired--indeed, he had been originally gifted with-- an extraordinary insight into the national consciousness and traditions of the various peoples among whom he found himself. His nature, instinctively cosmopolitan, had grown with his experience. A careful student of peoples and customs, he had shown an appreciation of the virtues of foreign peoples which the English had been quick to recognize even in his informal sketches.

Alexander Everett's suggestion that he translate Navarrete's "Voyages of Columbus" was merely the stimulus required to stir Irving into action of a kind he had long contemplated. His refusal to go on with the translation of this work, when he had familiarized himself with it, proved his sound judgment as an historian, for he instinctively realized that this dry collection of facts required humanizing before it could hope to arouse popular interest.

Irving's decision to write a history of his own, based upon the life and voyages of Columbus, was prompted by his great

-121-

-HOLDELCEOD A CJ UNGERICO IC SEREVOY LEE CONTRACTO A CONSTRACTOR

Namination invite was ideally fitted to wherther the nite ing of a slopery of thristopher Solucius and his versame of discovery. As an histopical-street and unusually hereits of the set can, he and decaly interested in the reconsity of the set and mad been as instrumental in the floovery of his constry. As a restored of long utending in various Europeen constructs he had acquired--indeed, he had been entrinelly withed with-- an erbraordinary insight into the stings remediated hisself, and nature, in the verious records and remediated hisself, and nature, of the verious records and remediate here an an isometry of the verious records and remediated hisself, and nature, of the verious records and remediate here an an interestable in the verious records and remediate here had here an an interestable in the verious records and remediate here had here an an interestable in the verious records and remediated here have an interestable in the verious records and remediate here had here an interestable is the interest of peoples and remediate here here an interestable is the verious here here an interest and here here here an interestable is the verious and here informant shares in Enclied here here and is the verious and the informant shares in Enclied here here an interest is the verious and the informant shares in Enclied here built be

Alexander Everett's suggestion that he translate Nevernet to "versaes of Columbus" was serving the stimulus required to stir irving tote action of a bind he had long contomplated. Whe refront to go an sich the translation of this work, such is had "autifarized himself with it, revea his home jutreent as an bistories, for he institutely realized that the bistories in of facts required membring before it outfields to with interest.

divint's locision to write a history of his smo, beacd and

-121-

interest in the subject. Resident in Madrid with an official standing as an attache of the American ministry, he was able to command every possible aid in the undertaking. His own literary reputation alone made such assistance merely nominal, as his personal popularity never failed to win him enthusiastic co-operation.

It was Washington Irving's actual presence in Spain during the writing of this history that enabled him to produce a work of such authenticity and charm. He might well have succeeded in producing a translation of Navarrete's history had he done the work in England or America, for such a translation would have been largely mechanical and as translator he would not have been responsible for the truthfulness of the narrative. But undertaking, as he did, the writing of a history of Columbus based upon his own investigations and knowledge, it was imperative that he be within easy reach of unimpeachable sources. As I have already indicated, he did endless research work in the Royal Library at Madrid and the library of the Jesuits' College of San Isidro. He acknowledged many useful suggestions from the Spanish historian Navarrete, and he also makes mention of the library of the American Consul at Madrid. He based his history upon that of the Spanish historian Bishop Las Casas and he had constant reference to the original journal of Columbus himself. All these advantages it is apparent would have been denied him had he been elsewhere than in Spain.

It may be well to mention what may appear already obvious,

-122-

interent in the subject. Resident in Madrid with an official siz aing as an attacht of the American ministry, he was able to command every possible and in the undertaking. His own literary reputation alone and such assistance merely pontral, is his peraonal nopularity never failed to win big output setup co-operation.

it was Washington Irving's actual processory in Somia c drow a compose of mid beldene dedd grotald alud to paidire odd end at bebecaus eval fier dain of . true the distant well they succeeded in gro are well much an had grotald a starrows to moltalanget a priorb in Sneland or America, for such a translation would have been largely machanical and as transfitter is yould not have been respansible for the brutefulness of the narrative. But undertailing as no did, the writing of a bistory of Columbus haved woon his ous investigations and knowledge, it was imperative that he be ai there was read a the sources aldedonoquinu to deser was mithin Alcated, he did endless recorded work in the Royal Library as at .orbisi nes is egelico thitseat and is verifit and bus birtal navarrett, and he also makes wantion of the library of the Amor can Concut at Madrid. Se based bis blatery upon that of the Scan the ortginal fournal of Columnica Line 11 these diversion and than in Soaln.

to may be well to mention what any appear already olyious

-227-

namely, that Irving was an accomplished scholar of the Spanish tongue. He was quite content to study old Spanish documents, for he not only had no difficulty in interpreting their meaning, but was sufficiently versed in the history of the period to appreciate their true significance. This mastery of a foreign tongue gave him an insight into the Spanish mind and sympathy with Spanish history and viewpoint that would have been lacking in a writer not so fortunately equipped.

Finally, the temperament of Washington Irving himself fitted him perfectly for his projected work. As I have already indicated, his purpose was to write a "minute and circumstantial" account of the subject, "endeavoring to place every fact in such a point of view that the reader might perceive its merits and draw his own maxims and conclusions." He also strove to reproduce the flavor of the historic period in which Columbus lived and labored, for, as he studied the documentary evidence of the times, he became impressed with the intrigues and secret hostility against which Columbus constantly had to struggle.

1

It is not surprising, then, that Irving has produced a history of Columbus and his voyages that has become a standard of excellence. It is as carefully documented as any historical work of the present day. Its refreshing narrative style has all the charm inherent in the work of Washington Irving. There is nothing dull or prosaic about it, nor is it ever weakened by any display of partisanship. Not less important, the history brought to light 1. Washington Irving, Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus, p.9.

-123-

namely, thet inving was as accomplished scholar of the (panis) tonate. He was pulle content to study old Branish noomereks, to he not only had no difficulty in interpreting their meaning, but eas sufficiently toreed in the missory of the period to apprecia their true atgnificance. This mastery of a foreign tonque gave in an insight into the Scantsh mind and sympathy with Spanish history and viewpoint that would neve been incline in a writer not so forton-

Finally, the bespersion of Washington Irving bisself fitted into periodity for his projected work. As i have almosty indicated, his purpose was to write a "minute and electrometanhiel" account of the subject, "emeasoring to place every fact in mich a point of view that the reader signt perceive its manife and draw hitrow marks and conclusions." He also almove to reproduce the fixed or the itstoric period in which Columbus lived and labored, for, as he studied the concentraty evidence of the times, he became improceed with the intrigues and search he times, he became formations constantly had to structed.

It is not surprising, then, that inving he produced a litetary of Columbus and his voyages that had become a standard of evrellance. It is as tarefully documented as any historical work of the present day. "to refreshing merrative style has all the charintervent in the work of Washington living. There is nothing out or process about it, nor is it ever weakened by any display of partizanabio. Not leas important, the history prought to light the washington trying, life and Voyages of Christopher Columina, p. 9. many new and significant phases of Columbus' career which gave a clearer picture of the character of the great navigator. It is not surprising, therefore, that Murray revised his original decision not to publish such a work and that it met with enthusiastic acclaim upon both sides of the Atlantic. A revised edition, in fact, became a standard text book in the schools and colleges of the period.

VOYAGES OF THE COMPANIONS OF COLUMBUS

Though this particular work of Irving's was not published until 1830, its subject matter was definitely linked with his research for "The Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus". The idea of this history took shape in Irving's mind as he worked on the "Life", for he felt that it would be a fitting addition to the knowledge of the world concerning this adventurous period. The discoveries of Balboa, Pinzon, Pizzaro, were of the greatest importance in the discovery and development of the American continent. It was one of the ironies of fate that these men were actually to accomplish what Columbus dreamed about.

The First Voyage of Alonzo De Ojeda

Alonzo de Ojeda had already been associated with Columbus in his activities in Hispaniola and had proved to be an intrepid and successful leader of men. He had been brought up as a page in the household of one of Spain's leading nobles and military leaders, the Duke of Medina Celi, and had been trained in arms and in the graces of court life. De Ojeda was famous for his

-124-

clearer don algebrar ocht panage of Golugouel orreer which geve clearer dotare of the dhanester of the great nawlestor. It is not sarrenaine, florefere, that Murray revised 410 original decision not so publies such a rork and that it cet with subhusio the acciste upon noth aldes of the atlantic. A revised which on in fact, became a standard text hout in the nubble, a revised while of an period.

-45-1-

VOLAGES OF THE JOINT AND ONE OF COLUMN

Though the persioniar rook of irring's was not builtabed out 11 18-0, its subject anticer for arightely linked with the resecred for "The Life and Verages of Buildtepher Columna". The idea of this Misbory took dispa in Fring's mind as he worked on the "Life", for he fait that it would be a fitting autibus to the radified of the world concerning this cirching autibus ind. The discoveries of Balaca, Finson, Planeto, wore of the yrach and the theories one of the tool indices of the the tool outfied theories of the world concerning the the the sector too the radified of the world concerning the the the the too and the theories of the solid concerning the the too of the the set incortance in the discovery shi isvelopment of the American codting to accounties of the too incoment of the the too action to the theory of the too incoment of the the too constants to accounties are done of the too incoment of the the too action in the too of the too incoment of the too of the too constants to accounties are done of the too incoment of the too action in the too of the too incoment of the too of the too action in the too of the too incoment of the too of the too action in the too of the too incoment of the too of the too action in the too of the too incoments of the too of the too action in the too of the too incoments of the too of the too.

The Marak Voyage of Aloneo ne olada

Alonio to Oleda hed alrendy team advoitated with delivated is its activities in Hispaniols and had proved to be an intremin and successful leader of meb. to had been brought up as a page in the the blacebold of one of Spain's leading hobles and military leaders, the blas of Median Celi, and had been trained in succ and in the graces of some Tife. De Glada was famous for his prowess in individual combat and his strength and perseverence were topics of common talk all over Spain. He had a cousin, a Dominican friar, who was one of the first inquisitors of Spain and a great favorite with the Catholic sovereigns. This cousin was, moreover, an intimate friend of Bishop Fonseca, who had the chief management of Indian affairs, so it will be seen that Alonzo de Ojeda possessed a personality and influence likely to be of assistance to him in the Spanish court.

Ojeda was in Spain when a letter from Columbus was received giving his account of his third voyage and of his discovery of the coast of Faria. Columbus' accounts of the wealth of this land, especially the abundance of pearls to be found there, excited the imagination and cupidity of Ojeda, who immediately conceived the idea of undertaking an expedition of his own to this promised land. Bishop Fonseca, an inveterate enemy of Columbus, saw an opportunity to harm the admiral, while at the same time gratifying his friendship for Ojeda, so he granted him authority to undertake a voyage to Paria. Ojeda was forbidden to visit any lands discovered by Columbus previous to 1495, or any territory over which the Fortuguese possessed control. It is interesting to note that Ferdinand and Isabella had revoked permission for private adventurers to voyage to America. Aware of this, Fonseca did not seek royal authority for Ojeda, who sailed without it.

Ojeda sailed with a squadron of four vessels from Port St. Mary in May of the year 1499 and landed safely at the Island of Trinidad. One of his associates on this voyage was Amerigo Ves-

-125-

provess in individual contat and his strength and enverynence ware topics of commany talk all over Spain. Is had a Sousing a bounded on there, who was one of the First inquisitors of Spain and a great ferenties alth the Catholic moverniums. This coust: one, moreover, an intimate friend of Sister Fermands, who has the other connected of priend of Sister Fermands, who has the set of the transmission of the set in the set fill be seen that it of a de the friend of personality and in including to be a set of the transmission of state in the set fill be seen that it of a de the friend of personality and in including to be a set of the transmission of the first set in the set fill be set of the assistered to personality and in including to be a

Oreds we in Spain when a lotter from tolumer was moving algiving his account of his third vareds and of his discovery of the deset of farth. Columbus' accounts of the wayses of fairs in conscinity the soundance of pérmis to be found there, wolted the insectation and unright of Ojeda, who investately connerved the date of underturing an excedition of his own to his promised have a funder formeros, an investate energy of foldathic, as an a spectrulic to farth the addition of his own to his promised of and. Have formeros, an investate energy of foldathic, as an a state frincishing for Ojeda, so he granted him authority to underbie veryers to farthe of the second him authority to underdiscovered by for Ojeda, so he granted him authority to underbies the formation provides to 1403, or any territoing over discovered by Southus provides to 1403, or any territoing over which the formations of leafed and to 1403, or any territoing over the farthing of a second ordinal fit is lateration for hot inter the formation of an even and the territoing over the farthing and lashelia had revealed errated on fit is lateration for the tant ferthings to asserband or disclose for the second of the second that ferthings to asserband and revealed or the second of the ordes and the second or second in a second or disclose for any territoing to hot the ferthings and lashelia had revealed or this, former or did not

ands rotal subharity for Ofeda, who asiled without it. Ofeda setied with a subadron of four vascely from fact it. Mary it line of the year 1499 and landod safely at the Trine of Trinifed. One if his associates on the version was decrise four pucci, a Florentine merchant, whose letters give much information about the customs of the natives. He was much interested in the form of their houses, which were bell-shaped, made of tree-trunks, thatched with palm leaves, and large enough to shelter six hundred persons. A change of residence was necessary every seven or eight years because of the crowding and the maladies originating from the heat of the climate. The disposal of their dead also interested Vespucci. It was their custom to place the body in a cavern, leave a jar of water and food at its head, and abandon it without any sign of lamentation. If they believed one of their number to be dying, they placed him in a hammock, suspended from a tree in the forest. They then danced about him until evening, left four day's supplies, and abandoned him. If he recovered and returned to the village, he was received with great rejoicing, but if he died the body was left in the hammock without further ceremony.

The native method of handling a fever also excited interest. The patient was plunged into a bath of very cold water, and then compelled to run in circles about a great fire, until he was in a violent perspiration, when he was put to bed and allowed to sleep. This treatment was almost always efficacious.

After touching at the Gulf of Paria, Ojeda steered along the coast of Terra Firma, until he arrived at the Gulf of Pearls. At Maracapana he unloaded and careened his vessels for repairs, living on the bounty of the natives who proved most friendly. The natives sought his aid against a distant tribe of cannibals who often invaded their shores. Always ready for a fight, Ojeda purcel, a Florentine aurohaut, where lobbors give and hermantic about the austoms of the matives. He was put interreted in the form of bheir houses, which were built-shaped, ands of tree-tranks, thateled with pair leaves, and large enough to shalter all humoned paraons. A channes of nonlidence was necessary every neven or etgic the hoat of the titate. The dispassion of their stat internet all book of the titate. The dispassion of their stat and also the hoat of the titate. The dispassion the bety in a cavara all very eight of mat the substance of their mutica from the hoat of the titate. The dispassion of their mutica from and very a far of rater and food at its head, and short in a cavara, the forest. They that in a hermood, subspaced from a true (a doy's supplies, and abactored him. If he recovered and robust to the very mather had an all on the recovered and the doy's supplies, and abactored him. If he recovered and robust to the village, he mat received him. If he recovered and robust to the volume of the bactored him. If he recovered and robust to the village, he mat received him. If he recovered and robust to the village, he mat received him. If he recovered and robust the ford the body mas left in the bacook sites to the individual here and the hold the body mas left in the bacook sites of the recovered here of the free to the follow.

(A) (3/13) -2 (1 (-) +382- 2) -

The patient was plunged into a back of very cold water, and then outpatient was plunged into a back of very cold water, and then compalied to run in circles about a grant fire, until in war in a violent paraglration, when he was out to bed and allowed to cleep. This treatment was simont always officestous.

After toughing at the Julf of Farts, Ojoda stated at the the court of Terra, notil he arrived at the Julf of Fearly At Marscopaus he unloaded and coreened his vessels for repairs, living on the bounty of the natives who proved sort friendly. The matives cought ofs all against a distant tribe of carmibals who often invaded tools shores. Always ready for a fight, Ojoda took on board seven Indian guides and sailed for the Caribee Islands. He found the shores of one of these islands thronged with Indians who showed every evidence of hostility. Ojeda ordered out his boats, filled them with soldiers, whom he ordered to lie down out of sight on the bottom. Each boat mounted a small cannon. As the boats approached the shore the natives discharged a flight of arrows, without much effect, and threw themselves into the water to attack the boats. The soldiers now arose, discharged their weapons, and put the natives to flight. On this occasion the superior armor and equipment of the Spanish was triumphant.

Ojeda now proceeded to the island of Curazao, until he came to a deep gulf. He entered this tranquil lake and was surprised to discover a large marine village resting on its waters. The houses were built on piles and were bell-shaped, with a drawbridge which could be raised for protection. Ojeda quite naturally called this the Gulf of Venice, from which the present-day name of the country, Venezuela, derives. The natives here proved treacherous. In proof of apparent friendship they visited the vessels, bringing with them sixteen young girls, whom they divided among the ships as tokens of amity. The canoes of the Indians surrounded the ships, engaged in friendly barter. At a preconceived signal the Indians discharged their arrows, while all the Indian maidens dived from the ships. Ojeda, with his customary promptness, launched his boats and succeeded in driving away the natives.

Having failed as yet to realize his dreams of vast wealth, Ojeda now continued his voyage along the west coast of Venezuela.

-1217-

took on board seven hidian guides and called for the larfbes is lands, is found the shores of one of these islengs thronged with hodians was showed every evidence of postility. Ujeds ordered out all bates, filled thet its soldiers, when he ordered to the aces out of sight on the battor. Here have here islenged a fight the bate spreathed the shore the natives directory a fight of drows, without and effect, and these incomred a fight water to strack the books. The soldiers now stone, discharged the superior and put the natives to be and the here the superior and put the natives to be acession the superior and put the natives to be acession the superior and and outputs of the fight. On this boased the superior and soldiers of the fight.

Joda may proceeded to the laiend of Cormans, will ne ouse to a deep gulf. He entered this tranquit lake and we wurprised to risectors a large marine village mesting on the matter. The houses were bailt on piles and more ball-dhaped, with a draw bridge which could be raised for recession. djada gutte makenelit called this the Sold of ventes, from which the present-day have of the could by Venezuels, derives. The patives cure proved freederout. In proof of ingerent friendanis they without the vement, the ships as tokens of makey. The sames of the vement, the ships as tokens of makey. The sames of the field attract the infield the ships, ended in the incluse setting the infield disately of makey. The sames of the later without the infield disately with the sames of the the mean, the infield disately divide the incluse the remain the infield disately divide the incluse of the remain is the house and the solar of and the field of the same wither the infield disately divide the incluse of the incluse the same of the basis and essenced in the incluse one of a signition of the basis and essenced in the incluse one of a signition of the basis and essenced in the incluse one of and the same of the basis and essenced in the incluse one of a signi-

-121-

Still unsuccessful, he later sailed for Hispaniola, though his orders forbade him to land on the island. In his "Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus" Irving describes the meeting between Roldan, the reformed rebel sent by Columbus, and Ojeda. The latter, forced eventually to leave Hispaniola, returned to Cadiz in June, 1500, his vessel filled with prisoners to be sold as slaves, but without the pearls and gold of which he had been in search. When all the expenses of the voyage were met, but five hundred ducats remained to be divided among fifty-five adventurers. But if the voyage was a financial failure, it had at least resulted in further knowledge of the new lands across the sea.

The Voyage of Pedro Nino and Christoval Guerra

The voyage of Pedro Nino, who had sailed with Columbus as a pilot on his first voyage, and Christoval Guerra, a rich merchant of Seville who financed the expedition, is of interest because it resulted in greater material gain than any other voyage that had been made to the western islands. The expedition consisted of a single fifty-ton ship, with a crew of thirty-three. But a few days after the departure of Ojeda on his first voyage, the little vessel put out from Palos on a voyage which was to eclipse in profit the more elaborate expeditions of Columbus himself.

The vessel followed Columbus' route on his first voyage and reached the coast of Paria about fifteen days after Ojeda. Here dye-wood was cut and friendly trading with the natives proved profitable. The ship encountered near the coast a squadron of

-12'8-

BEILD BELLO READERED, AD LINER WILDERING, LEIERING, LEIER, LEIER,

The Vayses of Fudro Mino and Christowal Guerra

The value of Pedra Mino, who had aslied with Columina as a filet an his first voyage, and Shrictoval Guorra, a rish matorant of deville who financed the expectation, is of interest osanage is resulted in grouter esterial gate than ar other vision that and been rode to the measons islants. The expectation doer with that and are string-ton the measons islants. The expectation doer with a few days ofter the departure of these on his first voyage, but in the island out from Falodich a voyage shire are to collars in profin the more to be expectations of this first voyage, but in profin the more to a the expectations of this work of the voyage. And in profin the more of the state of this of the voyage of the voyage. And in profin the more of backs of this first voyage. And in profin the more of a back of this is a state of the state in profin the state of the state of the state of the state of the interfactor of the state of the state of the state of the state of the research of the state of the state of the state of the columnation of the state of the stat

and reaches the seast of Faria about fifteen days ifter lisis. Usie dye-wood she out and friendly trading with the native proved profitable. The antp encountered cour the seast a squarman of eighteen canoes manned by the dreaded Caribs, who did not hesitate to attack. A sudden burst of artillery from the ports of the caravel proved too much for their courage, however, and the native squadron fled.

Nino and Guerra now steered for the island of Margareta, where they were successful in obtaining, by barter, a considerable quantity of pearls. They also traded along the coast of Cumana, where they landed at various native coast towns with profitable results. If the number of natives seemed to menace their safety, they remained on board ship and compelled the natives to come to them. The usual glass beads and other trinkets were exchanged for gold or pearls. These pearls were of unusual size and beauty and the Spaniards remained on the coast of Cumana for three months, profiting greatly by their transactions. Coming at length to a part of the coast where Ojeda had given battle to the natives, Nino and Guerra met with a hostile reception and wisely decided to return to Spain.

The unusual success of the expedition made all Spain throb with excitement and the Spanish government itself suspicious that its share of the profits had not all been paid. Nino was imprisoned for a time, but was released when no proof of his culpability was advanced. This expedition was noteworthy because of its peaceful methods and financial success. It paid in ducats, evidently, to avoid trouble with the Indians, but the Spaniards were very slow to discover and apply this fact, as the actions of later explorers amply proved.

-129-

ergbtees canoes mained by the dreaded Cariba, sho old not hesttate to attack. A sadden burnt of ertillers from the parts of the paravel proved too much for their courses, however, and the native squadron fled.

Also and Sherre hor steered for the toland of Margareta, where they wore auccessful in similar, by barter, a considered a quantity of pearin. They due tredse along the opeat of Sedana, where they landed in various notive court torms with profitable readits. If the musber of antives escand to mease their eately they remained on board ship and competied the netives to court them. The meas pearis mere of unesual size and beauty an gold or pearis. These pearis mere of unesual size and beauty an profiting of the cast where ofeds had riven beits to a the the cast where ofeds had given battle to the actives, part of the cast where ofeds had given battle to the actives, to result on the object had given battle to the actives, the cast where ofeds had given battle to the actives, part of the cast with a hostile reception and wheely toolded to return to Fain.

The unnext success of the excedition ands all Spain through with excitement and the Spaniar government itself smepholene that its abase of the profits had not all been main. When we will imprisoned for a time, but was released when no proof of his outpability was advanced. This expedition was notoworkey because of its peaceful methods and linencial success. It paid in ducat: evidently, to avoid trouble with the linencial success. It paid in ducat: ware very slow to discover and apply this first, as the actions of later explorers amply droved.

-1. 1-

The Voyage of Vincente Pinzon in 1499

We already know how prominent was the part the Pinzon family played in the first voyage of Columbus. They had aided the admiral to finance his first voyage, but the jealousy and treachery of Martin Pinzon had alienated Columbus from him, while pride forbade further co-operation. As soon, however, as Ferdinand and Isabella permitted any Spaniard to organize his own expedition for overseas, this ancient family of navigators thought they saw an opportunity for enrichment. Bishop Fonseca was delighted to issue the authorization, for he considered it a direct blow at the prestige of Columbus himself.

Vicente Pinzon was the leader of the expedition, which consisted of four caravels. His three principal pilots, or ship's officers, had sailed with Columbus, as had many of his crew. Pinzon's funds were exhausted by the financial drain of fitting out his ships for sea, as the merchants and ship-chandlers of Palos charged him eighty to one hundred per cent about the market value for their merchandise. He chose to pay these exhorbitant prices rather than delay his sailing.

The little fleet put to sea in December, passed the Canaries and Cape de Verde Islands, and sailed about seven hundred leagues to the southwest, where they crossed the equator and lost sight of the north star. A terrible tempest nearly destroyed them and without the north star they were ignorant of their course, but Pinzon sailed in what he believed to be a westerly direction and

the Voyage of Vincente Times in 1499

The already habit how prominent was the part the Pinton family played in the first voyage of Columns. Shey had wheel the admiral to Finance his first voyage, all the Jeuloosy are transiory of Dertin Pinnen had allemated Columna from him, while arise for bade further co-operation. As soon, however, as ferdinand and for overgase, whis ancient family of maving are the action for overgase, whis ancient family of maving are the dought the sub an opportunity for antionant. Shabor Somecon was delighted to have him authorization, for he considered it a direct blow at the pressing of Columna, for he considered it a direct blow at the pressing of Columna, for he considered it a direct blow at

Wheente kinnen was the leader of the excedition, which donshated of four excess. His times principal pilots, or ship's officers, had salled with Columbnic, as had deer of this arew. Hisson's funde more answered to the fituation doubt of fitching and his ables for see, for the uncentric ability doubt of falor onerged atm signing to one bundred for and show this complete of falor for their acrementing. He there to pay hears exhorisitent origins rather hash delay his saliting.

The little floot put to see in December, passed the Canar en and Cape de Verde Telende, and sailed about neven monored league to the southwest, where they crossed the souscor and lost sight of the morth star, a terrible tampest mariy destroyed them and without the morth star they were "gnorant of their course, but discussed in what he polleyed to be a westeriv direction and

-050-

finally made land. He called it Cape Santa Maria de la Consolacion, from his joy at sight of it, but he did not know that it was a part of what is now known as Brazil. He landed and took possession in the name of Spain, so this rather casual discovery meant much to the future of his native land. The Indians he encountered were of unusual stature and fierceness and repelled all efforts at barter.

Discouraged with the inhospitable character of the coast, Pinzon now sailed to the northwest, until he came to the mouth of a river too shallow to float his vessels. He sent his boats ashore and his men beheld a group of Indians on a neighboring hill. Pinzon sent a single armed soldier to meet them, who approached and threw to them a single hawk's bell. The natives accepted the bell and threw a small gilded wand in return. As the Spaniard stooped to pick it up, the Indians rushed upon him. He defended himself so bravely with sword and buckler that he kept his attackers at bay until his comrades could come to his assistance.

A general encounter now ensued and this time the Spaniards were defeated. Eight or ten Spaniards were slain by arrows or lances and the remainder compelled to retreat to their boats. The natives attacked the boats and a desperate encounter resulted. One of the boats was seized, its crew overpowered, and it was borne off in triumph. The remaining white men succeeded in reaching their vessels, after the most disastrous defeat ever meted out by the Indians.

Pinzon now sailed forty leagues to the northwest until he

-130-

"That's guile land. He called it dependent maria de la domaciacion, from his jey at sight of it, but he fid not know that it was a part of such is now incom as ireatif. He isudationed foot possession in the mane of simil, so this father casual discopety means much to the ruburs of his mative tand. He infiems he ety means much to the ruburs of his mative tand. He infiems he all offorte at barter.

Allegeburged with the inhost table disregter of the caust, Places now sailed to the northwest, until he are to the wouth of a river too shallow to float his wearsts. He cent his poste annors and his man behale a group of Indians on a meighforing (nill. Sign don's a single areas solitar to seet then. The point ad and three to them a single areas solitar to seet the Alion factor the tail and three a small diled wand in roturn. As the Spaniar atooped to plat it on, the indiane rushed word in roturn. As the Spaniar atoped to plat it word and biokier the boli is the defended atopic of the compated with areas to bis the setted atopic of the setted with areas to bis the setted atopic at he setted with a finite one of the setted at a bis bay until his compated and biskier to be he and a staded at a bay and it he compated could come to he added and at a bay and he setted.

A primeral encounter now encoded and this time too Spaniands were defouted. Eight or ten Spaniands were shall by errors or lances and the remainder composited to retreat to their hosts. In matives attacked the bonth and andered the encomptor resulted. One of the boats was solved, its area of encoded to to was corne off in artumer. The remaining white was succeeded in a contest to the informate the mont distributions leises ever neted to by the Indians.

on ilday second the out of apagage this beiles wer near

-130-

came to a mighty river. He was led to its discovery by finding the sea so fresh that he was able to replenish his water casks. This phenomenon induced him to sail to land, where he found a river of great width and depth, no other than the Amazon. The rush of fresh water from the river and the salt tide of the ocean caused mountainous waves from which he extricated his little squadron with difficulty. He had found little gold in the country, so he requited the hospitality of the natives by carrying off thirtysix as captives.

He now picked up the north star and laid his course to Hispaniola. While at anchor off the island in July a tremendous hurricane arose and two of his caravels sank with all their crew. A third ship was driven to sea, while the crew of the fourth took to the boats and escaped safely to shore. Fortunately, the caraval driven to sea returned after the storm, the abandoned vessel survived the tempest, and the Spaniards repaired the damage and returned safely to the harbor of Palos in September.

The expedition proved to be one of the most disastrous undertaken to the new world. The loss of life had been great and the voyage had proved a financial failure. The merchants of Palos attached the vessel in an effort to secure payment for their supplies. Pinzon appealed to the sovereigns for permission to sell three hundred and fifty quintals of Brazil-wood which he had brought back with him and thus satisfied the demands of his creditors. But the popularity of a voyage to the Indies as a means of recouping financial losses suffered a temporary eclipse.

-131-

came to a mighty river. He was led to its discovery by finding the was so freek blat he was able to reclemist his datar make. This phenomenon induced his to sail to land, where he found a river of great which and doubh, no other than the anagon. The rush of freeh water from the river and the calt blas of the soen commed mountainous waves from which he extricated his little we ad to with difficulty. He had found little cold in the country, so be required the bospitality of the natives by carrying off thing v-

Hoperiols, While at menoria star and 1412 his course to Hoperiols, While at menor off the island in July a treashous hurricane apone and two of his carevels mank with all their ore. A third ship was friven to rea, while the crew of the fourth took to the posts and escaped taiely to phore. Fortunately, the carevel miven to ass returned after the atom, the shundred, the vessel survived the bespect, and the Spaniards repaired the date.

The expedition proved to be and of the cost disatrons undertated to the new world. The lose of life had baom ereat and the royage had proved a finnerial fathur. The merokate of all of attacked the vessel in an effort to Becker parament for fmar to biles. Pinson appealed to the devertage for permission to sell three hundred and tifty outnots of Brasil-wood which he had to back back with the devented of Brasil-wood which he had to back back with the torage to the demende of his creditors.

- 12 -

Second Voyage of Alonzo de Ojeda

Ojeda now aspired to a more successful second voyage. Through the good offices of Bishop Fonseca he secured a royal grant of six leagues of land in the southern part of Hispaniola and the government of the province of Coquibacoa, which he had discovered. He was required to make further exploration of Terra Firma, but was forbidden to trade in pearls on the coast of Paria. He was also ordered to colonize Coquibacoa and was permitted to enjoy half the revenus therefrom. Ferdinand had been alarmed at the report of English adventurers off the coast of this province and he wished a military post to be set up there to defend the country for Spain. Ojeda found two men willing to advance money for the expedition and a squadron of four ships was fitted out.

After touching at the island of Margarita, de Ojeda sailed to a part of the coast which he named Valfermosa, where he pillaged the Indians with his usual ruthlessness. Arrived at Coquibacoa, he determined to locate his first settlement at Santa Cruz, now called Bahia Honda. He constructed a fortress, not without some interference from the natives, and filled it with equipment and supplies. Upon the completion of the fort, Ojeda discovered that his fleet was in grave danger from the broma, or worms, which had riddled the hulls of his vessels. Soon the lack of provisions made itself felt and his men began to murmur. His associates, Vergara and Ocampo, objected to Ojeda's private control of the strong box and laid a plot to entrap him. Ojeda was invited on board Vergara's caraval,

-132-

second Veyage of Alonge de Olega

with In

Oleda now aspired to a more annound of the product royage. Through the good offices of 31shop Fonneeu be product a royal grant of eix hearnes of land in the contherm part of Hoppshiols and the proverment of the province of Coontbecos, which he had discovered. The was required to make further exclometion of Cerre Firm, hat has forbited to these in pentil of the genet of Serre Firm, hat and forbited to the in pentil of the genet of Serre Firm, hat the forbited to colonize continent and the series of the rosho forbited to colonize contained and the following and the of the treasure therefore. Forbited at the first of the following orth of firstlas structurety of the genet of the genet following for the sail the reveaue therefore is the genet to defend the control of a stiftent out to be set up there to defend the control of any firstlas adventure to be set up there to defend the control of any firstlas adventure of four ships was for the donted the firstlast a square of four ships was for the anney for the

After touching at the island of Margarita, Ge Ogela estied to a part of the doast shite in usned Valformens, where in utilat the infilms atthe the annual ruthiessenses. Arrived at Codulbaces, he estermined to losate his first estilement at Danks Orns, now called this fourin. We constructed a fortress, not sittness some interfer one from the matives, and filled it with Squipment and sneptics. As in grave danger from the brone, on solve with had itself as in grave danger from the brone, on solve, which had itself the smills of his vessels. Not the last of the first interfect of estimates from the brone, on solve, which had itself as in grave danger from the brone, on solve, which had itself the smills of his vessels. Not the last of the strong date itself of ebjected to Oleca's private control of the strong bas and idal solution to private and first associates, Vergare and last of ebjected to Oleca's private control of the strong bas and idal solution. which had just arrived from Jamica. He was then accused of stealing the funds of the expedition, of exceeding his authority in the province, with having stirred the Indians to needless rebellion, and with having proved himself altogether unreliable. Vergara and Ocampo then announced their intention of imprisoning him and of returning to Spain. Changing their intentions, they landed at San Domingo instead, where the chief judge, after hearing the complaints of both parties, returned a verdict against Ojeda and stripped him of all his possessions, leaving him in debt for the royal proportion of the profits of the voyage.

Third Voyage of Alonzo de Ojeda

King Ferdinand was greatly excited by the reports of Columbus regarding the gold mines of Veragua, but the admiral had failed to found a permanent colony there. His death removed an obstacle to its settlement, in the mind of Ferdinand, and he looked about for a proper person to effect the subjugation of the country. De Ojeda was absent from Spain at the time, but he heard of the King's design and sent his friend, Juan de la Cosa, to plead his cause at court. Ojeda had the support of Bishop Fonseca, but a rival leader of the expedition presented himself in the person of Diege de Nicuesa, a noble of important connections and great wealth. The King settled the difficulty by authorizing two expeditions and divided the continent between the two men, giving them permission to use the island of Jamaica as a common source of supplies. Juan de la Cosa was made lieutenant to Ojeda in the government of his

-133-

entor had the ornived from feater. He was then hadhed of start the the funde of the expectition, of expecting his authority is be pravides, with having streed the indians to meetices robollies, and with newing streed the indians to meetices robolages and or much having anomaled lists intention of incrisoning his and of returning to Spain. Chanking their intentione, they lead to had four the back gain. Chanking their intentione, they lead at his of returning to Spain. Chanking their intentione, they lead the featrone has the object judge, where hearing the stringed him of all his possestion, leaving him in dobt for bin result of the possestion, leaving him in dobt for bin

-123-

shere as contra to assive batan

the reporting the gold attract of version of the reports of dolumbut reporting the gold attract of version, but the attract had tall at to found a permanent column form. If that have beinged at the attracts to the relation to the first of resultant, and he haven about for a proper mersor to wheat the subjugation of the haven a ujoid reaching the solin at the time, use he haven or the a ujoid reaching the solin at the time, use he haven or the haven a shout from solin at the time, use he haven or the haven at assist the sensor to attract the subjugation of the haven the task a select and sole the theorem at the time, use he havend or the haven a bound. Clock the theorem of it does the pergen of the haven a bound. Clock the theorem of it who pergen of the select the expedition presented intervent in the pergen of the the notices, a mode of imperiant consolitions and creat result. The haven the intervent between the two wells in the pergen of the the notices, a mode of imperiant consolitions and creat the the notices, a mode of the subformation and extended intervent the notices and the the consol burges of subjuices when the set he totak of the the two wells intervent of the totak of the subjuicts of the the two wells in the set he totak of the subjuict as a consol burges of subjuices, when the set he totak inductions in the two wells intervent of the territory and it was the former who fitted out a ship and two brigantines to carry them to the new world. Nicuesa, possessed of ampler wealth, armed four large vessels and two brigantines, enslisted a larger force, and set sail with much acclaim.

The two fleets arrived at San Domingo at about the same time. Ojeda, incensed at the superior equipment of his rival, sought for some way to increase his own armament. Soon he met the Bachellor Martin Fernandez de Encisco, who had amassed a comfortable fortune as a lawyer in San Domingo. The promise of the chief judgeship of the new province decided Encisco to take a financial part in the adventure and he readily agreed to supply a vessel of his own and to recruit the men necessary to operate it. This done, he was to join Ojeda at his new colony.

Ojeda and Nicuessa, both impetuous and jealous of the authority of the other, quarreled about their rights in Jamaica, but Don Diego Columbus considered that he had some rights in the matter himself, and sent Juan de Esquibel to take possession for himself. Ojeda now departed for the province, but Nicuessa lingered at San Domingo, where he permitted himself to get into debt and was only allowed to depart upon payment of the sum in question by a generous spectator.

Arrived at the harbor of Carthagena, Juan de la Cosa was alarmed at the strength and hostility of the natives, fearing for the success of the expedition upon which he had staked his all. He advised Ojeda to locate his settlement at some less inhabited spot on the coast, but the impetuous soldier was too

-134-

breastings to carry then to the new world. Winders, possessed , senitheging out bas alesser oggel mot lone , diless maigne id

and of grade is outland the sal bevirte starts one and Size . Steda, Mississed at the superior entropy of Lina Liter. . A benabus hed off , costour of sebrears' addres dolleders end donf batable fortune as a lawyor in animen. The protocial of a ringhold part in the advantume and he readly allowed in anot to of there and the end thriper of hes ave sid in Federal u the atta it. This done, he was to fold Oleva at his why polare.

Sigds and Micuassa, both has there and Baloup of Mic. thority of the other, sucrealed about their rights in Januare, matter himself, and apat Jush to Focultel to take phesenion for - will sussified and departed for the prevince, mit Windsade the stat dan lowing, where he president to get into thett and theory of any end of inerfed and bedal to few out in question bas by a generous spectator.

di s

has been at ab mail a shear for first and as law ford

-- 18 [--

proud to alter his plans on account of the Indians. He landed and ordered the friars with him to read aloud a proclamation announcing him as the governor of the new province and requiring obedience on pain of death. The natives were little impressed and offered signs of hostility, which infuriated Ojeda so much that he rushed upon them instantly, pursuing them triumphantly four leagues into the interior. He met further resistance as he advanced, but he again succeeded in driving the Indians further inland. Taking captive seventy of the enemy, he continued to advance, in spite of the warning of de la Cosa. Coming upon a deserted village at nightfall, his men began to plunder. They were suddenly attacked with great fury while they were thus separated, but this time their iron armor did not avail and most of them were killed.

Ojeda took refuge in a native hut with a few soldiers. He managed to protect himself from a shower of arrows, but all his men were slain. La Cosa joined him with a few men, but he had been wounded by a poisoned arrow and soon succumbed. Only one man escaped to tell the story of this disaster. Days afterward, men from the ships were searching the shores for traces of the little army that had followed Ojeda into the interior. They caught sight of the body of a white man stretched across the roots of a mangrove tree. Coming nearer, they discovered it to be Ojeda, in the last stages of hunger and exhaustion. When he had been revived, he described how he had cut his way alone through the Indians, had wandered for days in the mountains, not daring to show himself

-135-

proved to alter his plans on account of the Indians. He landed and ordered the friere with his to read aloid a proclamation and ing him as the governor of the new province and readining obediance on pain of death. The natives were distill impressed and offered algas of heatility, which infurtated Ojeds so much that he ranked upon thes interior. He set further resistance as he advanced, but he again succeeded in driving the Indiana further ranke, in spike of the warning of de is bear. Gesing upon a detarted village at nightfall, his men began to plumaer. They were availed village at high frost further her builder. They were setted village at nightfall, his men began to plumaer. They were availed the size the mean of the last bear. Gesing upon a detarted village at nightfall, his men began to plumaer. They were availed the size their from armonic distributes and her being the tasts their from armonic distributes and note of the second with grost fury while the years to build an feature.

Quada took refuge in a native but with a tew soldiers. He managed to protect himself from a shower of arrows, but all his man were slain. La Cosa ioimed him with a few men, but ne had been wounted by a poissoned arrow and scon succumbed. Only one man coccept to tell the story of buis disaster. Days afterward, men from the ships were searching the shores for traces of the iittle army that had followed disda into the interior. They ashed alght of the hody of a white una stretched screes the roots of a sight of the hody of a white una stretched screes the roots of a his last stands of bunger and exhaustion. Then he holes here very the last stands of bunger and exhaustion. Then he here be ofeds, in the deportion how he had out his way alone through the linkitana.

-135-

for fear of capture, and had finally made his way in safety to the coast.

Nicuessa's ships soon entered the harbor, to the great distress of Ojeda, who feared that Nicuessa would take advantage of his weakness to wreak personal vengeance upon him. Nicuessa upheld the best traditions of Spanish nobility, however, and offered instead to avenge the loss of Ojeda's little army. The two governors, now on terms of amity, led an expedition for four hundred men to the Indian village. Believing that the Spaniards had been driven off, the natives kept no watch and were easily surprised. Ojeda and Nicuessa took a terrible vengeance upon them, burning the village and slaying all the inhabitants.

Ojeda now set sail for the Gulf of Uraba and searched for the river Darien, famous for gold among the natives, but did not find it. Finally he gave up further exploration and founded his new settlement upon a height at the east side of the Gulf. Calling it San Sebastian, quite aptly, he erected the usual fortress and took the usual precaution of surrounding it with a stockade. He further sent word to Encisco at San Domingo that he must hurry to the rescue with his ship. His men had now great fear of the poisoned arrows, which were capable of penetrating iron armor. On several expeditions into the interior the Spaniards met disaster at the hands of the enraged natives and it was no longer possible for them to forage the country for supplies, as in the past.

Irving offers to us a vivid description of the difficulties

-136-

for fear of oupfure, and had finally made his way in anteby to the coust.

Measures is chips noon antered the harbor, to the great altrass of Ojode, who forred that Mousess would take advantage of his weatness is wreak personal vongeands upon his. Michensa upheld the best traditions of Spaniah norility, however, and offered instead to evenge the lose of state! a little army. we two sovernore, dow on targe of sairy, led an expedition for four haddred new so the Tadien village. Belleving that the Spaniards and prize 1. Ojeds and Nieusses book a terrible vengeande upon then, prize 1. Ojeds and Nieusses book a terrible vengeande upon then, our solve the states of all the family of the manifest and prize 1. Ojeds and Nieusses book a terrible vengeande upon then, prize 1. Ojeds and Nieusses book a terrible vengeande upon then,

Distant now not shill for the dult of Urebs and pearened for the river Darler, Nemons for all shops the untives, we and an tind it. Finally to Keve up forther exploration and function new settlement upon a best of at the east alde of the usual forfolling it han Bebastien, quite aptiv, he precised the usual forress and how the usual precedition of surrounding it with a stock and. He further some word to Enclose at Sur restacts is with a stock burry to has recouse with his only, wis men had now grad four an the poisoned arrows, which were consiste of genetrating iron ardiaster at the hands of the substant of surrounding it with a stock distant of a stock the stock which were consiste of genetrating iron arbus poisoned arrows, which were consiste of genetrating iron ardiaster at the hands of the enroyed hatives and it was no long er possible for these to force the country for supplies, at in the past.

irvits offere to an a vivid description of the difficulties

-361-

of the Spanish soldiers in this expedition under Ojeda. He supplies us with intensely interesting details of a period and a people of whom most Americans would have little knowledge, were it not for the painstaking research of Washington Irving and his easy narrative style, which appeals to readers of every degree of intelligence and taste.

The natives believed that Ojeda bore a charmed life, which he himself believed. He carried a little painting of the Virgin with him constantly, which had been given him by Bishop Fonseca, and at the end of the day's march would often kneel before it in adoration. Wishing to determine the truth of Ojeda's belief, which seemed borne out by circumstances, the Indians concealed four of their number in ambush. They then advanced toward the fort uttering yells of defiance, thinking that, as usual, Ojeda would rush forth to defy them. He did so, following them into the forest past the ambushed warriors, who now launched their shafts. Three arrows struck his buckler and glanced off, but the fourth wounded him in the thigh.

The poison made itself felt in the form of a chill which penetrated the lower part of his body. Ojeda was inspired with a sudden thought. He compelled the reluctant surgeon to press a red hot iron plate against the wound, bearing the pain without a murmur. He then had his inflamed body wrapped in sheets steeped in vinegar to assuage the burns. Bishop Las Casas, writes Irving, is authority for the statement that a cure was miraculously effected.

-137-

or the boarish poldters in this expedicion under Ofede. We supplied the with intracely interesting details of a partod and a mapple of show next Americans would have little intowlease, wore it ast for the pointtaking research of Techington irving and his seev normalsive style, which acpuals to readers of every degree of intelligonce and isste.

The matives believed that ojeds bore a charmed life, which the itimeoif believed. He carried a little printing of the Virgin of the his constantly, which had been given his dy fremo Scheece, and at the out of the let's merch would often and before it is shoretion. Mishing to determine the truth of oleds's believe it is beened borne out by circums sances, the indians concessed four of their number is sminsh. They then strandow to set of the out that to defy them, he did so, following them into the forest out for sminshed marriers, who not leanshed their shell fract the sminished marriers, who not leanshed their shells. Mines the this outles the did so, following them into the forest out the thirs had been and slanced off, but the fourth arounded the h

The poloon made theolf felt in the form of a duill which perstrated the lower part of his body. Ojeda was inspired with a so dan insucht, He compelled the rejustant surgeon to press a rehot iron plate against the would, bearing the tain althout a mumu, he then had his inflamed body mapped in cheets stooped in sines he accuse the borne. Stroop las datas, writes irving, if wrowith fit for efference the new last access in the is a rest of second the former for a strong last base, writes irving, if wrowith fit for efference the corner of a strong strong of its around the inflament for a strong last base writes irving. Starvation now threatened San Sebastian, for the town was practically in a state of siege. Rebellion was imminent, but matters were arranging themselves at San Domingo in a manner almost miraculously devised to aid the beleagured governor. Ojeda's vessel, which he had sent to San Domingo to hasten the arrival of Encisco, had reached that port freighted with slaves and gold, giving proof of the wealth of the new settlement. A certain Bernardino de Talavera, a reckless adventurer, found himself threatened with prison for debt. Secretly gathering a band of rascals in similar case with himself, he decided to escape to San Sebastian to retrieve his fortunes. Hearing of a vessel at Cape Tiburon, on the western side of Hispaniola, they boarded her, overpowered the crew, and managed to make their way to the new colony.

The appearance of this vessel at San Sebastian gave Ojeda his opportunity. He decided to return in her to San Domingo to secure aid, but concealed his intentions from her pirate crew. Scarcely had Ojeda come aboard the ship when a fierce altercation broke out between him and Talavera as to who was entitled to command. He challenged the entire crew to combat, two at a time, but his reputation was well known and they declined. Instead, they threw him into the hold in irons. But nature intervened, a terrible storn arose, and the amateur navigators of the pirate crew, having little faith in their own seamanship, demanded that Ojeda be given **v**ommand in the emergency. He accepted the responsibility, on condition that he be allowed to pilot the ship to her destination. Storms and adverse winds drove him away from

-138-

Starvetion of threatened in Sobestian, for the bown was resolvenily in a state of siege. Reballion was instrant, but haventy wire arranging themselves at 5.7 Diskings in a summer almult miraculously levised to all the balesshured governor. Obtain vessel, which he had sont to the balesshured governor. Obtain of Encises, had reached and point fraighted with slaves and sold string wood of the reached and point fraighted with slaves and sold darities mood of the reached and point fraighted with slaves and sold harding lay prison for debt. Secretly gathering a band of rescals in ethilar ones atta bimenti, he desided to compe to San Sebastian attain wedlern alte of Manuali, he desided to compe to San Sebastian be reactive his fortunes. Marking of a vessel at Sape Tiburon, of the wedlern alte of Manualis, the formed has, overpowered the ones, and summade to reac that say to dis new colory.

The americanes of this versel of San behasting rave djeda hit ampributity, de decides to return in ner to and Bosingo to because and, but concerned in in intervious from her pirate oner. Secure and, but concerned in the ship shan a fierce alterestic mean out between him and Talayars as to who was emittled to conman. He challenged the entire from to sho was emittled to conthe, if if it a sation was well and they declined. Instead, they fight a sation was well and the trons. But nature intervened, a correst to the held in their own seemanning, declined that areas, having little faith in their own seemanning, demanded that ofens to store the held in their own seemanning, demanded that areas, having little faith in their own seemanning, demanded that offens to store the held in the second of the secondential of the second of the respontion of the the second of the respontion of the held in the second of the respondential the second of the second of the responentiality, or condition that he he satiowed to pilot the ship to her decimation, dorms and siveres winds drave him awy from

-138-

San Domingo, however, and he had no other recourse but to beach the vessel, in a sinking condition, on the shore of Cuba.

The author now describes the epic journey of Ojeda and his companions through the swamps of Cuba. His little band was too feeble and disheartened to fight its way through the populous parts of the island, so Ojeda tried to make his way between the mountainous regions of the island and the coastline. The savannahs, where the Spaniards had only to overcome long grass and creeping vines, soon gave way to a deep morass. Hoping to reach the end of this, the travellers continued on their way, only to meet the same terrible conditions. Surrounded by water up to their waists, they yet suffered awful thirst, for the water was too briny to drink. Their only supplies were remnants of cassava bread and cheese and roots which they secured along the way. Rest was impossible except in the limbs of the trees. For thirty days Ojeda and his men suffered the tortures of the damned. Of the seventy men who entered this fatal morass, but thirty-five emerged after a journey of thirty leagues. At length, leaving behind him the remnants of his band, Ojeda pressed forward until he encountered firm ground. Following a footpath, they at length arrived at an Indian village, where they sank exhausted. The Indians treated them with more than Christian forbearance, and the cacique of the tribe sent his warriors into the swamp to rescue the remaining Spaniards.

Guided by the Indians across the province of Macaca, Ojeda arrived at the coast, procured canoes at this point, and arrived safe at Jamaica. He found himself obliged to take refuge with Don Diego's governor, Esquibel, whom he had formerly threatened

-139-

Jomingo, llowever, and he list no other recourse but to heach the vessel, in a sinking coudition, on the shore of Cuba. "The suther new deservices the ords fourney of Gjeda and his ocj sew band offill eld .adu? 10 samewa edi devorit anolasamoo parts of the laland, so Ofeda tried to make his way between the , stanasvas our .antijaago and has haalei add to anoiner enonisingon vines, soon sev may to a deed worses. do ing to reach the end of this, the travellers continued on their say, only to meat the same torij., stalen wight of nu noter of ogbauoung. enoldinco aldiviet ret suffered afful thiret. for the water wat too bring to drink ter Their only supplies were remanar of essawa bread and cheese and roots which they coursed along the way. Rest was imperiale except in the limbs of the Lrees. For thirty days Sjeda and his wan butbeneine can new throwse and 10 . bounds and to security of the bene this ratal morned, but this ty-five energed after s loughey of bilting leagues. At length, leaving bening bin the remande of hi band, Clede pressed forward until he encountered fire mound. palliv naloni ne da bevivre dignel is yolt . nissicol s anivoller where they can't evinenced. The Indiana treated them with more than Thristian forbearance, and the cacique of the tribe went his war

+9354

Unided by the Indiana serves the province of Magana, Goda arrived at the coust, procured canoba at this point, and arrived aate at Jamaica. He found himself obliged to take rejuge with to kill if he set foot on the island. Esquebel received him in friendly fashion and sent him on his way to San D_omingo. Ruined in fortune and health, Alonzo de Ojeda, one of the most courageous and picturesque explorers of all Spain, now assumed a humble part in the life of San Domingo and died later without money enough to provide for his own burial.

Vasco Nunez de Balboa

As one of the most famous of Spanish explorers, Irving now turns to the career of Balboa, an adventurer whom he characterizes as "equally daring, far more renowned, and not less unfortunate" than Ojeda. Like all the other Spanish explorers, the fate of Balboa was complicated by swiftly changing political conditions. The little community of Darien divided into two factions, one favoring the ambitions of the Bachelor Encisco, the other those of Balboa. Balboa summoned the lawyer to trial on a charge of usurping the powers of alcalde mayor, on the appointment of Ojeda, whose authority Balboa contended did not extend to Darien. Encisco was adjudged guilty, stripped of his property, and thrown into prison. He presently secured permission to return to Spain, but Balboa sent on the same ship Zamudio, his fellow alcalde, so that he might be in Spain to refute the expected charges of Encisco.

Balboa knew that the sending of riches to Spain would do much to induce Ferdinand to continue him in authority. Acting upon the advice of two Spaniards who had previously taken refuge with Careta, the cacique of Coyba, who informed him that he would

-140-

-0254

to 1111 if he sot foot on the island. Esquabel received him in intending tankien and sant tim on alls way to San Domingo. Miked in fortune and health. Alonno de Ojeda, one of the most sourathone and picturesque explorers of all Spain, how assumed a humble purc in the life of San Domingo and died istan without money enough to the life for his own buriel.

Yando humaz de Balboa

and ane of the most famous of Spanish explorers, irving now sistens to the children of Ballon, an advonturer when he distrestantics as "squally daring, far nore renowned, and not less unfortunate" than Uleta. Like all the other Baunish explorers, the fate of . arcitibado legitibes anticity obarging political conditions. Cavoring the amolitons of the Suchelor Rocksto, the other those usurping the now re of alcelie asyor, on the spointment of Ojede, strate antherity Talbes contesided Claiment, bo Dartell' Inclass as adjunced sullty, attingen of his protective and throws into prison. He presently secured permission to return to ceath; lat alboa sent on the anga shin samelio, his fallos elogido, so that wich to induce Ferdinand to continue his in authority. Acting with terets, the endlone of Coyle, who informed him that he would find immense booty at the home of the chieftain, he set off for Coyba with a hundred and thirty men. Careta received him hospitably, but told him that he had neither gold nor a great supply of provisions. Balboa's informant assured him secretly that the cacique was deceiving him. The Spanish governor now took a cordial leave of the Indian and started his journey homeward, but he turned back at nightfall, surprised the village and took the cacique and his family prisoners. Careta agreed to supply the desired provisions and offered Balboa his daughter as a hostage for future good conduct. Balboa accepted his terms and gradually allowed the Indian princess to acquire great influence over him.

Balboa's next expedition took him to the adjacent province of Comagre. He again was well received by the cacique, who endeavored to purchase his good will by giving him four thousand ounces of gold and sixty slaves. The Spaniards fell into a violent dispute over the division of the spoils. At this the cacique pointed southward to a range of mountains. Beyond these, he told Balboa, lay a great sea and beyond the sea was a great continent, on the southern slope of which lived a people who had much gold. He informed the explorer that the journey to the sea was through the territory of many powerful native chieftains, some of whom were cannibals, and that he would need at least a thousand men to defeat them. Such was his description of the Pacific Ocean and the territory adjacent thereto. The project captured the imagination of Balboa and became his chief objective throughout the remainder of his life. Its success meant fame and fortune

-141-

Find incourse booky at the hore of the oniofests, he act off for Copte with a humined and thirty men. Careta received him heepitebly, but told him that he had metther gold nor a great supply of provisions. Salboa's informant sessured him secretly that the backque was dedaiving him. The Grand an governor has teached and latve of the indian and started his journey homeward, but he turned back at nightfall, surprised the village and took the cadigue provisions and offered alaboe his daughty the desired provisions and offered laboe his daughter as a nostage for during provisions and offered the tarms and granusity intering and his raphy prisoners. Oursts agreed to supply the desired provisions and offered laboe his farms and granusity allowed the good sonduct. Balbos koossted his tarms and granusity allowed the and the princes to could he formate and granusity allowed the sold teat for daughter as a present to be formation of the sold teat of the solution of the farms and granusity allowed the sold teat of the solution of the farms and granusity allowed the

- - - -

Tailoos's next expedition took him be buy of jugate province or domagne. Is rush nos well recorves of the four themand purises, as to purchase his good will be riving his four themand purises, at hold and sixty slawes. The Contarts fail into a vision dismute over the divinion of the apolis. At this the estime politied douthword to a rease of dountains. For this the estime politibox, isy a great new and bound the reaves we a great continent, an the sociaries alone of will on the double size index and the information of the foundation. Borond these, he told is: an the sociaries alone of will be the second these, he told is an the sociaries alone of will be the fourney to the sea we through the information of mark powerful mative conditioned, also al when and the territory of mark powerful mative conditioned, alone of when and the territory adjacent thereto. The project blue for the sea and the territory adjacent thereto. The project of the fraction and the territory adjacent thereto. The oracle blue four the imageterritory adjacent thereto. The project of the fraction does and the territory adjacent thereto. The project of the fraction the territory adjacent thereto. The project is the fraction to be the finite index of the second point of the fraction of the territory of the life. It success point of second to be a finited to present of the life. It success prove for other to be a finited to an finite of the life. It success point for on the finite of the territory of the life. It success point for on the finite of the point of the finite of the success point for on the finite of the territory of the life. It success point for on the finite of the point of the finite of the success point of the finite of the point of the section of the success point of the finite of the finite of the territory of the life. It is success point for on the finite of the point of the section of the section of the finite of the f undreamed and he continually strove to bring about the discovery of this fabled country.

Balboa decided to explore the province of Dobayba, forty leagues distant, which was the seat of a fabled temple dedicated to an Indian goddess, which tradition reported to be filled with gold in various forms. He took with him one hundred and seventy men, two brigantines, and a number of canoes. When he reached a great river called the Rio Grande de San Juan, he detached one third of his forces to explore the stream, while he followed another branch of the river to Dobayba. Zemac, the cacique of Darien and his old enemy, had warned the inhabitants of the Spaniards' approach, so Balboa entered a deserted village. Disappointed in his expectation of finding provisions and great wealth and deterred by the wild nature of the country from further exploration, Balboa withdrew to the Gulf of Uraba and rejoined his detachment. He now explored a stream which emptied into the Grand River and came into a region of shallow lakes. The houses of the natives were built in the trees and entered by ladders which afforded access to them and which could be withdrawn in case of attack. After cutting down some of the trees, the Spaniards persuaded the natives to descend. The Indians proved destitute of wealth in any form and Balboa retreated unsatisfied to Darien.

Shortly afterward Hurtado, whom he had left with a small expedition on the Black River, returned with a remnant of his force, which had been greatly decimated by Indian attacks. He

-142-

undreared and he continually strove to tring about the discovery

Salboa Secided to explore the province of Donayba, forty tession distant, which was the seat of a fained temple dedicated to an Indian golders, which tradition recorded to be Tilled with men, two it igantines, and a number of cances. When he reached a another branch of the river to Pobayba. Semac, the capique of werten and his did energy, had warned the inhabitanty of the Spaniarda' approach, so Bailos entered a deserved village. 111wealth and deterred by the wild makine of the country from fivethar exploration, Bilboa withdrew to the Gulf of Unthe and re-. Bould welled to noiger a cont and one toyle and of cont Leastno ine asent out it billed over active and one creek and ontered tiondrawa in case of stites. After sutting down some of the trees, the Araniards persuaded the matives to dedend. The fallana protect destitute of realth in any form and Calbas retreated unactionited to Darien.

Shortly afterward Surtado, whom he had left with a small expedition on the Mark River, returned with a remnant of his force, which here there is all decimated by indian attance, he brought news of a great Indian conspiracy between Zemaco and four other Indian chieftains, who planned to surprise Darien. The information was corroborated by an Indian maiden named Fulvia, who was strongly attached to Balboa. He sent for her brother, who told him the details of the plot, The caciques had assembled five thousand men and planned to attack the settlement by land and water at night.

Balboa made a circuit by land with seventy men, while he sent sixty men in canoes under the guidance of the Indian prisoner. They surprised the Indian leaders and secured many provisions, but failed to capture Zemaco. The leading conspirators were hanged and rebellion died out for the time, at least.

News now came from Spain that the Bachelor Encisco had succeeded in arousing the sympathy of the Spanish throne. Ferdinand had reversed the decision against Encisco and threatened to summon Balboa to Spain to explain his actions. Dismayed by these tidings, Balboa decided to make a bold effort to discover the S_outhern Sea, as success in this great enterprise would be almost certain to result in renewed favor from the throne. His little army consisted of one hundred and ninety of his best men and he also took with him a number of bloodhounds, of whom the Indians stood in great terror. He embarked on a single brigantine and nine large canoes and soon arrived at Coyba, from whose cacique Careta he had accepted his daughter as a hostage.

Balboa left about half of his men at Coyba to guard the ship and canoes, while he struck into the mountains with the re-

-143-

four other have of a great indian compliancy belower langed and four other hallon chieftains, who planned to surprise Parish. The information was corroborated by an Indian matter named Fulvia, who are strongly altached to balbos. He sent for her brother, who told bin the detailer of the plot.-The contrudes had assembled five theoremic uses and planned to attack the detailement by land and water at might.

-242-

delbos ands a clreat by land with seventy men, while he sent sixty as in candes under the subbance of the Indian prisonar. They surprised the Indian Losders and scoured any proviclose, but failed to supture 'emace. The loading conspirators were banged and rebellion lied out for the the. at least.

succeeded in erousing the explaint of the Spanled throne. Ferdingred had reveners the explain of the Spanled throne. Ferthere intered had reveners the collate bit artisch, blemayed of these things, Salpos to Grein to explain bit artisch, blemayed of these things, Salpos doubted to make a poid effort to discover the S_uthern Bes, as success is with great enterprise would be almost certain to result in renewed favor from the throne. He is and he also took with his a mumber of bloodbounds, of shop the india a shoot in freat terror, he emberged of a single briganting and he also took with his a mumber of bloodbounds, of shop the is and he also took with his a mumber of bloodbounds, of shop the is and he also took with his a sumber of bloodbounds, of shop the is and he also took with his a single briganting and nine large cances and scon arrivel at Coyle, from whose scoled to hal accontartive of the substate.

ship and cances, while no struck into the nountains with the re-

mainder. The tropical heat and the march into the highlands along precipitous mountain trails was exhausting for armored men. Arrived at the village of Ponca, the foe of Careta, the expedition again encountered a deserted village. At length Ponca was located and persuaded to come to Balboa, who won his good will and persuaded him to furnish guides through his territory. Ponca assured him that only one more mountain separated him from the Southern Sea.

After putting to flight the Indians of the next territory entered, the Spaniards marched to the village of the cacique, Quaraqua, where they found considerable booty in gold and jewels. Arrived near the summit of the last mountain range, Balboa ordered his men to rest while he ascended the final peak. As he gained the final height, he saw below him forest and green savannahs and in the distance the glittering waters of the Pacific. The discovery took place upon the twenty-sixth of September, 1513. As Balboa advanced to the shores of the Pacific he was met by the Indian chieftain of the territory, Chiapes, who forbade his advance. The explorer ordered his arquebusiers to the front, poured in a volley at short range, let loose his bloodhounds, and the astonished natives fled in wild disorder. Chiapes now thought better of his resistence, brought forth five hundred pounds of gold as a peace offering, and granted permission to the Spaniards to remain in the territory

Balboa now determined to cross a great gulf which penetrated into the land. Chiapes warned him of sudden storms at this season

-144-

mainder. Who tropical have and the march into the Mighlinds along precipitous momntain fulls Gase anauting for armored men. invice at the village of Foner, the fee of Garate, the expedition again encountered a deserted village. At length Fones are located and percuaded to come to Balbes, who wen his good will and coreneded iim to furnish rulies through his territory. Fonce assure this that only one more mountain appareted him from the Southerm fac.

After public of flight the Indians of the next territory onteres, the Spaniards marched to the village of the excitus, inerrates, where they examine of the last nounbain range, salies order, traived near the examit of the last nounbain range, salies order, ad the sam to past wills to assended the first near, by he gained the final height, he may below his foreat and green savannais and in the distance the distants waters of the Facific. The height the distance the distants, waters of the Facific. The therevery toor place under the twenty-circle of the facific. The advance. The support place under the twenty-circle of the facific. The the first height, he new below his foreat and green savannais and in the distance the distants, waters of the facific. The advance. The striden to the torpicery, ontape, and forted his the writes the relation of the torpicery, ontape, and forted his advance. The strident of the torpicery, ontape, and forted his the the relation of the torpicery, ontappe, and forted his advance, the relative field in wild disorder. Shingse now the the relative of his restances, is the torpic for his head has and the relative of the restances, the torpic forth fire nurded to outle of sole of the restances, the torpic holds has been and the torpic of his restances, the torpic forth fire nurded to be the torpice of his restances, the second of the forth fire nurded to outle of sole of the restances, throught forth fire nurded to bounds of sole of his restances, the territory

Balios now determined to cross a great gull wilch penetraled into the land. Chispes warmed him of suddon stories at this saasch of the year, but the Spaniard embarked sixty men in mine cances and set sail. Soon tremendous seas threatened to swamp the heavily laden craft, and only the success of the Indians in tying them together in pairs prevented disaster. Toward evening the expedition took refuge upon a small island. They were awakened in the night by the rising waters, until they found themselves standing in the sea up to their waists. Fortunately the waters then began to subside and they came to a realization of the high tides of this new Southern Sea. The cances were badly battered and it was with difficulty that they were bound and braced with bark and sea weed to render them again seaworthy.

At length Balboa made his way to a corner of the gulf ruled over by Tumaco. Again the musketry and the dogs put the natives to route and friendly relations were then established. Tumaco gave the explorer much gold and two hundred pearls of great size and beauty. He also informed him that the coast which he saw stretching to the west continued without end far to the south where he would find a country abounding with gold. This was the second time that Balboa had received news of Peru.

Balboa had received visible proof of the existence of the Southern Ocean and had taken possession of it for his sovereign. He also felt certain that the land stretching southward was indeed a continent of great riches. Feeling that he had accomplished his great mission, he decided to begin his return to Darien. The return journey presented terrible difficulties. The march led through impenetrable morasses, over steep mountain trails, and

-145-

of the year, but the scanterd embanded strip were in Alme cances and get mail. Soon treasmonds sees threatened to swamp the beauity lades ormet, and only the success of the Indiana in tying the together in pairs prevented disaster. Toward evening the expedition book reluge upon a small talent. Where were awakened in the hight by the relates writers which they down themselves attanding the subaide and they came to a realization of the high Lides of the new Southern Das. The cances sore the battered and it was with difficulty that they save bound and braced with the south of a subaide and they came to a realization of the high Lides of the addition difficulty that they save bound and braced with the set of with difficulty that they save bound and braced with the set of a subaide to render the scale set as a set of the battered and it was

At length Balbow made his way to a corner of the full ruled by Tunaco. Again the musketry and the dogs put the natives to route and friendly relations were than established. Tumaco gave bbe outporer much gold and two hundred peords of great size and resuly. He also informed nim that the coset which he say stretching that a nountry shounding with gold. This mas the south where he would find a nountry shounding with gold. This mas the scond time that he he her received news of ferm.

Balbon had reserved visible proof of the existence of the Southern Goega and had then possession of it for his sovereign. He also fait certain that the land stretching conthward was indeed a continent of most riches. Selling that he had accupitant air great mission, he decided to begin his return to Darien. The return fourney measured terrible difficulties. The though led through impenetrable morasses, over steep nountain trails, and

-725-

through land destitute of water and provisions. Warned by their guides, the Spaniards had nevertheless failed to prepare themselves with the necessary supplies, preferring to carry with them the immense quantity of booty which they had captured. Famine ensued, little relieved by the Indians through whose territory they passed.

Reaching the land of the warlike cacique Tubanama, whom all the Indian tribes greatly feared, Balboa looked at his tired little band and decided that if he were to win through this territory he would have to do it by stratagem, rather than by force. He accordingly advanced secretly upon the village of Tubanama, surprised it in the night, and captured the redoutable cacique and his family without difficulty. All resistance proved to be at an end. Tubanama offered gold to the value of six thousand crowns for his release and the Spaniards proceeded upon their way rejoicing, arriving safely at Darien in January of the year 1514.

The Bachelor Encisco had now won his case and Ferdinand had decided to supplant Balboa as governor of Darien. His determination was strengthened by the arrival in Spain of Cayzedo and Colmenares with tidings of the existence of the great Southern Sea, which had been communicated to them by the son of the cacique Comagre. Ferdinand appointed Don Pedro Arias Davilla, known as Pedrarias, as governor and gave him two thousand men and lavish equipment. The chivalry of Spain thronged to join the expedition. Scarcely had the little group of explorers sailed, however, when Pedro Arbolancho arrived as the emissary of Balboa, announcing

-146-

birrough land destitute of water and provisions. "armed by their guides, the Spaniards had nevertheless failed to prepare themselves with the measury supplies, proferring to carry with them the immense duantity of booty which they had captured. Famine ensued little relieved by the fullame through whose territory that ease ed.

Respire the land of the marille continue Tubanama, whom all the fullen tribes (reably forred, Falbos looked at his thread hit ris band and decided that if he were to in through bhis territory he you's have to do it by streament, rath r through bhis territory doutingly invertationerity under the village of Tubanama, surphiced it is the the night, and captured the redoutable contenes and his farliv withd , diffin it, and captured the redoutable contenes at an end. It is release and the value of air througed to be at an end. It's release and the farler of air through the for fur release and the farler is proceeded upon their as relating armiving sufely at Derien in January of the year 1514.

The Successor Endisor into now won his case and Ferdinand Haldecided to supplient Julboa as governor of Darlen. His deterningtion was strengthened by the arrival in Spein of Seyredo and Solmenaces with tidings of the existence of the great Southern Sas, which had been communicated to them by the sourief the casique federarine, as governor and gave bin two known as redrarine, as governor and gave bin two knowning and lavia endipment. The chiveley of Spain thromged to join the expedition proceety had the title group of notorers satisd, nower, when redro Arbolancho errived as the emisery of Balbus, sonoworky the actual discovery of the Pacific and bearing the gold and pearls due the King. Ferdinand, practical man that he was, repented of his decision to depose the governor and demanded of Bishop Fonseca that he devise proper amends.

Upon the arrival of Don Pedrarias at Darien he at first conducted himself with great circumspection. Saying nothing of his intentions toward Balboa, he won his immediate confidence and persuade him to make a written report of his discoveries. The discoverer plotted his route, wrote detailed descriptions of the Pearl Islands, and gave other indispensable information. Upon the conclusion of this kindly act, Don Pedrarias revealed his true character and started judicial proceedings against the governor.

Quevado, Bishop of Darien, fearing the power of the new governor, decided to oppose him and took up the cause of Balboa. The chief judge, who had come with Don Pedrarias, was likewise loath to proceed against the governor. In spite of the secret attempt of Don Pedrarias to manufacture evidence against Balboa, the governor was acquitted of malfeasance. The Bishop, wishing to keep Balboa at Darien to advance his own fortunes, also persuaded Don Pedrarias not to send himback to Spain, suggesting that his presence there would probably result in a change of the royal attitude toward him, since the news of his discoveries had reached Spain.

Again famine and disease took their toll of the inhabitants of Darien. Many of the Spanish cavaliers perished, seven hundred

-147-

the actual discovery of the Panific and bearing the gold and pearly due the Mine. Sordinand, practical man that he was, repented of his decision to depose the governor and demanded of statop Fonesce that he devise proper amende.

Upon the arrival of Don Felmarias at Daries is of first evolutioned himself with great circumspection. Saving nothing of his intentions toward Balboa, he won his immediate confidence and porsuade him to make a written report of his discoveries. The discoverer plotted his route, wrote detailed descriptions of the Savi Islands, and gave other indispensable information. Upon the consusion of this kindly set, for federates revealed his crue character and started judicial proceedings against the govetor.

Quevado, bianop of Darien, fearing the pover of the new governor, decided to oppose him and took up the same of balups. The same fudge, who had eare with and Fedrarize, was likew'se loads to muceed splitted the governer. In onits of the secret strengt of Don Fedrarize to sandfeature evidence willord walfor, the governar was acquitted of malfeature evidence willord walfor, to keep Balbos at harien to advance his orm fortunes, also noraunded fon Fedrarize not to send historic to Spain, suggesting that his presence bare would probably result in a change of the royal attribute toward him and the second to be the coveries the royal has presence bare would probably result in a change of the royal aptilities to send the news of als discoveries the royal aptilities to send the news of also be the royal

of Darien. Many of the Spanish pevaliers perisied, seven hundred

-147-

of them in one month, to be exact. Don Pedrarias now decided to distract the attention of the settlers from their miseries by sending an expedition to Dobaya in search of the golden temple. Many of the inexperienced cavaliers volunteered and the governor appointed ^Balboa to take the command, in the belief that he would fail in the enterprise. To make sure of this, he appointed Luis Carrillo to an equal share in the command. The expedition crossed the gulf and proceeded up the river leading to the district of Dobayba. They were suddenly surprised by a large fleet of cances and the Indian attack was so desperate that more than half of the Spaniards were killed. Luis Carrillo was transfixed by an Indian lance, Balboa himself was wounded, and the remanants of the expedition escaped with the greatest difficulty.

Orders from Spain now came that profoundly affected the relationship between Balboa and Don Pedrarias. Ferdinand expressed his appreciation of Balboa's discovery of the Southern Ocean, made him adelantado, or mayor, of the South Sea and governor of the provinces of Panama and Coyba, though subordinate to the general command of Don Pedrarias. The good Don concealed the news of Balboa's elevation to new honors while he called a council to decide what should be done about it. He proposed to keep Balboa in ignorance of Ferdinand's orders, meanwhile informing the King anew of the charges against the former governor. The Bishop of Darien insisted that this would constitute disobediance to the King. A compromise was finally agreed upon, by which Balboa was to be told of his appointment as governor of Panama and

-148-

of them in one couch, to be exact, Bun Fedramias now desided to equi much the extention of the restions from Lohn minumizers; and have the attention of the restions from Lohn minumizers; appointed is an expedictor to Dobaye in serre-up the colder temple. Anny of the inexperienced covalions rounded, in the wellef to the reverse appointed Salboe to bake the sommand, in the wellef to the new truct fail in the reterprise. To make bure of this, he southing the diminito to us equal share in the river leating to the district of bobypes. They were audienty surprised by a large these to a cances and the instant ware tiled. In the river leating to the salf of the Smallard ware tiled. And a surprise that is in forder to the standard ware the river leating to the there is a for a standard ware tiled. And a surprise that of us specifies the the stand ware tiled. And a surprise that is the expedicion escared ware tiled. The security of the indian lance, fellow here got the standard in the of the security ware the standard ware the surprise that the the is a specifies a standard ware the standard in the standard in the of the expedicion escared with the standard ware that the of the expedicion escared with the standard in the reversion of the expedicion escared with the standard in the reversion of the transments

relationarily between Bellos and Bon Pohlonian and Pohlonian Pohlonian Pression of the south exbioaced his enpreciation of Salbos's discovery of the douthern ocean, made his adeletion of Salbos's discovery of the douthern may of the provinces of Penema and Coybe, though subordinate to has general constant of Dou Pohlering. We good Don donesled the dews of Salbos's Stevetion to new beneric while to esticat a counties of solarity of the second the demonstration is coundent of the theorem and the second the destructure delies of the objection to new beneric while the esticat a counsent to deside dust humid to dens should be de salled a counben there are the adoles of ferdinand's officers, meanwhile information the the the objection that the formers while deserted the the the formation of the objective the former gravener. The boot the King, A compression that the former while deserted the boat may to be bod of the appointment advect and, by which Balboat as to be bod of the appointment advect and, by which Bal-

-242-

Coyba, but was not to be permitted to assume his new duties without the permission of Don Pedrarias.

At this moment Andres Garabito, whom Balboa had sent to Cuba to secure the necessary vessel, men, and supplies for his meditated secret expedition to the lands beyond the Southern Ocean, arrived near Darien. News of an armed ship was brought immediately to Don Pedrarias, who at once associated it with a treacherous attack upon himself. The Bishop of Darien succeeded in changing the governor's determination to send Balboa to prison. In fact, he argued with such skill that he eventually induced Don Pedrarias to cease his constant persecution. As a mark of their new relationship, the Don offered his eldest daughter to Balboa in marriage and even allowed him to plan and carry out his favorite enterprise of another exploration of the Southern Ocean.

Realizing from his former experience the impracticability of cances, Balboa now planned to prepare the materials for four brigantines on the Atlantic side of the Isthmus, transport them over the mountain trails to the coast of the Southern Ocean, and assemble them there. Several Spaniards, thirty negroes, and many Indians were engaged in this stupendous task. After the loss of many lives the timber for two brigantines was safely transported, only to discover that it had been rendered useless from the ravages of worms. Again, after the logs had been cut, the river suddenly rose and swept away the results of their labor, the workmen escaping with their lives by taking to the trees. Eventually,

-149-

doyba, but was not to be permitted to agoine his new duties

- Chile

As bhis moment Andres Garabito, anon baloos had sent to Cube to secure the nacessary vessel, man, and supplies for his modificial escure the nacessary vessel, man, and supplies for his deditated escure extendition to the lands payond the Southern functionally to Don Fedrarias, who at once asrociated it with a treacherous attack upon himself. The Bishop of Parlon successes to changing the governor'r determination to nemé Salbos to priduced Bon Fedrarias to coase his combant persecution. As a man for, th fact, he formed with aughtering the southant is evabually induced Bon Fedrarias to coase his combant persecution. As a man for fairs in marriage and even allowed due to glass and carry of the fairs in marriage and even allowed due to glas and carry of the fairs in marriage and even allowed due to glas and carry of the fairs in marriage and even allowed due to glas and carry of the favorite ontemprine of another exploration of the Southern ocean.

Lossing from his former experience the impracticability of conces, Balbas now plaused to prepare the materials for four brightines on the Ablantic side of the Esthmus, theneport the over the mountain trails to the cosst of the Esthmus, theneport the assemple them there. Several Berniards, thirty megness, and many indians are engaged in this stupendous task. After the loss of many lives the timber for two origentines was safely interported, of vormas. Again, after the logs had been redered useless from the reveases of vormas. Again, after the logs had been out, the river anden by ross and supple away the results of their labor, the workmen after incredible hardship, Balboa equipped two vessels, filled them with as many men as they would carry, and started upon his voyage.

He touched first at the Pearl Islands, where he intended to construct the two remaining vessels of his little fleet. Dispatching his two vessels to bring the remainder of his men to the islands, upon their return he decided on a voyage of exploration while the new ships were being constructed. Sailing about twenty leagues beyond the Gulf of San Miguel, he ran into a school of whales, which stretched like a barrier across his way. Fearing to run through them, the navigator decided not to sail further south at this time. In the morning the wind proved contrary and the whales were still in evidence. By such trivialities was Balboa robbed of the discovery of Peru.

He now returned to Isla Rica to complete the building of his two ships. While there, news reached him that Don Pedrarias was about to be superceded by another governor. After a council, he decided to send Andres Garabito to Acla, near Darien, on the pretext of procuring needed supplies. If Garabito found Don Pedrarias still in control, he was to account to him for the delay in the expedition. Should the governor have been deposed, Garabito was to return without delay with that information.

Balboa could not have chosen a more unfortunate messenger. Garabito harbored a secret grudge against the explorer, with whom he had quarreled over the daughter of the cacique Careta, of whom Balboa was still fond. Garabito had written privately after increatible hardable, Ballata equipped two vessels, filled then with as many as a they would same, and started upon his voyage.

He bound " first of the Peerl Islands, where he intended to construct the the remaining versels of his little flest. At satching his two ressels to prind the remainder of his verteo the following, there their return he desided on a veyage of exploration while the new ships were being constructed. Satiling about trenty lengues beyond the Gulf of San Miguel, he ran int a soluced of values, which stratem a like a barrier screes his may. Fearing to run this them, the marigator feelded not to each further south at this time. In the marigator feelded not to eatifues and the wheles were still in evidence. Sy such their siltings are defined of the riseovers of ferrier.

Po now roturned to talk high to complete the building of nis two slips. While there, have reached him that hon Padrarias was about to be superceded by another governor. After a roundil, he decided to semi andres derabite to hole, new Darien, on the pretext of procerting needed supplies. If derabite found Dou pedrarias attil in control, he was to account to him for the deley in the expedition. Should the governor insee been decound, strabite was to return without delay with that information.

Paihos could not have chosen a nore unfortunate messanger. Gerabito harbored a secret Grudge sgainet the explorer, with whom he had quarreled over the daughter of the cacique Careta. of whom Balboa was still fond. Jarabito had writhen privators

-021-

to Don Pedrarias, telling him that Balboa was still under the influence of his Indian paramour and that he had no intention of marrying the governor's daughter. He also stated that Balboa, when his other vessels were completed, intended to abandon all allegiance to Don Pedrarias and to sail as an independent commander.

Upon his arrival at Acla, Garabito found Don Pedrarias still in authority, his successor having died as he was about to land. The conduct of Garabito aroused suspicion and he was arrested and his letter of instructions discovered. Don Pedrarias was furious at the suspected treachery, but wrote a friendly letter to Balboa asking him to return to Careta for a conference before he went on his expedition. Fearing that Balboa might be suspicious of his designs, he also sent a band of men under Pizzaro to apprehend him. Balboa discovered the hostile intentions of the governor from the friendly messengers as he neared Acla, but permitted himself to be taken by Pizzaro and led before the governor.

A violent scene took place between them. Don Pedrarias accused him of disloyalty to Spain and of treachery to himself. Balboa indignantly denied any intention of disloyalty. He had surrendered voluntarily, he declared. He might easily, furthermore, have embarked upon his fleet, which was now completed, and have sailed away, had he chosen. Instead, he had come directly to Don Pedrarias to settle the misunderstanding amicably.

Balboa was now put to trial before the alcalde mayor, who had little hostility toward him. To strengthen the charges against

-151-

to Dom Federarize, telling the that Falbes was still under the influence of his Indian parameter and that he had no intention of marrying the covernor's congleter. He also alload that Falbes, then his other vescels were completed, intended to abanion all alloguance to Don reducting and to sail as an interaction comcander.

Boon his arrival at Acla, "arabito found from fedurarian at all in sutbority, his Buccessor having died as he was about to lime The conduct of Garabito aroused anaptoton and he was arreated and his latter of instructions discovered. For Pedrarias was furious at the maspected treachery, hat wrote a friendly latter to dalbon asking him to return to darsta for a conference before he was of his casedition. Fearing that belos alght he sample. olous of his casedition, he also sent a bend of men under firster; to apprecent him. Balbos discovered the heath of men under firster; to sovered the friendly messengers as he maded held, but permitted dimedf to be taken by Firster; and held before the govern of the sent of his set of the base and the heath of the set of the sovered dimedf to be taken by Firster; and held before the govern of

A violent onese took place between them. Ush redrarise accused him of disloyalty to Spain and of treashery to himself. Balbon indignant: denied any intention of 'deloyator. As had durrendored voluntarily, be declared. He might easily, furthermore, have embarized upon his 'lest, which was now completed, and deve sailed aray, had he chosen instead, he had come durectly

to Din Fedrerina to settle the minuderstanding anisobly. balbon was now out to trial before the monaide mayor, who had little hostility toward him. To strongthen the charges against

-161-

him, he was accused of wrongs against the Bachelor Encisco many years before. A verdict of guilty was finally pronounced upon Balboa and several of his officers and all were condemned to be executed. The community was deeply stirred by these executions. Balboa met death upon the block with the calmness of a man to whom death had ceased to hold any terror. Observed secretly by the malignant Don Pedrarias through a peephole in the walls of a nearby cottage, Balboa failed to satisfy the hopes of the governor that he would meet an ignominious end. Thus perished one of the greatest navigators and explorers that Spain had ever known.

CRITICAL ESTIMATE OF THE "VOYAGES OF THE COMPANIONS OF COLUMBUS"

In his introduction to the "Voyages " Irving states that this work was the direct outcome of his researches in Spain in preparation for the writing of his history of Columbus. With the instinct of the true historian, it was the author's habit to make profuse notes upon any subject that interested him, even though it had no immediate bearing upon the work in hand. This custom did somewhat delay him in the production of his history of Columbus, but it also resulted in the production of later works, of which the "Voyages and Discoveries of the Companions of Columbus" was one.

1

Irving was fascinated by the romantic grandeur of Spain 1. Washington Irving, Voyages and Discoveries, p. 324.

-152-

him, he was abouted of evenge equined the heaholor analate many years before. A verdict of guilt, was finally primoured upon Dalbos and several of his officers and all mere condenned to the executed. The community has deeply stirred by these theoretions usibos into oeach upon the block alth the calmases of a man to alow death had seared to hold any termur. Observed scorely by the malignant boo Fodrarias through a cassigle in the walls of a sporty coltage, balbos failed to parisfy the bigst of the systematic he would need an ignorizing the hole of the cone of the createst navigatore and any termur, bearved accretly by a southy coltage, balbos failed to parisfy the hole of the systematic he would need an ignorizing the hole balls of the transitional heat having the state of the hole of the coverner that he would need an ignorizing the hole balls of the state of the createst navigatore and any lorests that such hole one of the createst navigatore and any lorests that such hole over the search of the sould need and the search hole of the cover hole of the first here the sould be first the state of the one of the createst navigatore and any lorests that such hole over the the sould search and any lorests that such hole over the the sould search here the search hole the search hole of the cover the sould be the sould be the sould be the search hole of the cover the the search here the search hole of thole of the search hole of the search hole of thole of the

CRITICAL ESTIMATE OF THE "VOYAGES OF THE SOMPAHIONS OF GRITICAL SOMPAHIONS OF

In his introduction to the "voyages " irving states that this work we the direct outcome of his researches in Spain in preparation for the artting of his mattery of Gelusbut. With the instinut of the true historian, it was the author's habit to make projuke notes upon any subject that intermeted history though it had no immediate bearing upon the work in mad. This coustom tid somewhat delay his in the production of history of Gelusbus, but it also resulted in the production of later works, of which the "Voyages and Discoveries of the Organions of Gelusbus" was one.

irving was featinated by the porentic traddeus or Sasta

48 27 A

in the Feudal Ages. He deeply admired the bravery of the early explorers and was just the man to appreciate the spirit of chivalry which made their expeditions possible. As an historian, he also found the play of political intrigue at the court of Spain a study of profound interest and significance. He felt that the spirit of military glory, developed in Spain as the result of the long war against the Moors, had been transferred to the sea with the coming of Columbus and his successors. It was a spirit that had never been surpassed in the history of any nation and its practical application to the discovery of the new world deserved to be chronicled.

In his research work in the libraries of old Spain Irving discovered much interesting information which he wove into the fabric of his narrative. He gives fascinating details of the lives and customs of various Indian tribes. He is quick to feel the romantic glamor of the struggles and hardships of the Spanish cavaliers in their effort to colonize the new world. He pays full credit to their spirit of chivalry and enterprise, while he deplores their failure to practice the principles of the religion which they sought to impose upon the natives.

Irving found much to inspire him in the records of the Spanish historian Navarrete, who graciously placed his library at his disposal. He also acknowledges his indebtedness to the second volume of Oviedo's general history, which he explained existed only in manuscript form in the Columbian Library of the Cathedral of Seville. He also studied at great length the documents in the

-153-

in the Feunal Ages. Se duoply admired the bravery of the early explorers and was tust the and to appreciate the scirit of obtain any shift made their expenditions possible. As an historian, he clas form the ular of political intrinues at the count of spate o study of profound interest and significance. In this that the intril of milliary clars, developed in in-intro if he had the intril of definitions, and boau transferrer to the beau to the contary of following the secret, and boau transferrer to the beau to act of doluming and the secret, and boau transferrer to the beau with the contary of doluming and the secret of any mation and the prestical empirication to the discovery of the new world doserved to be discussed.

In his reserves with in the line line of old Spate leving discovered much interdeting information words he wore into the famile of his norrative. He gives favoinating details of the lives and contons of various indian tribes. He is details of the lives manble gissor of the struction and bardening of the opening caveliers in their struction colonize the new world. He save full or all to their stirit of oldreling and enterprise, while he deployed their failure to practice the principles of the religing which their gaught to factor the principles of the religing which also gaught to factor the principles of the religing which also gaught to factor the principles of the religing which

irving found much to imapire him in the records of the sponick thatories towardete, who gradianaly alcost his library at this instance. In also acknowledge at a suprement the sound values of origin's general history, which he explained estarged only in namizer, pt form in the columpies library of the defnedral of certilies de else studied at great length the focusents in the

-1.53 m

law case between Don Diego Columbus, the son of the great navigator, and the Spanish Crown. These documents, which revealed the inside story of the many intrigues and deceptions to which Columbus was subjected, would not have been accesible to him outside of Spain.

The style of this work is similar to that of his history of Columbus. Irving felt that a simple, detailed narrative, from which he kept all trace of his own opinions, would prove most interesting to the general reader. But, none the less, the reader is guided by the discriminating mind of Irving, who interprets and dramatizes the extraordinary character of these masterful explorers and paints in the colorful background of their exploits. The author succeeds to a remarkable degree in humanizing the period and nation of which he writes. His interest in the history of England, as revealed in his various sketches, had been largely developed as the result of study before his arrival in that country. His interest in Spain, on the other hand, was directly attributable to his long residence and travels in that country, which so inspired him that he was able to convert this inspiration to lifelong account.

IRVING'S REACTION TO SPANISH HISTORY AND PEOPLES

Washington Irving formed many lasting friendships at the Russian Ministry while living at Madrid. Prince Dolgorouki, a Russian attaché, and Irving found much in common, and Mlle. Bolviller, a friend of the Russian Minister, was another intimate.

-154-

law case between Den Diege Columinus, the son of the great navigator, and the Spaniah Grown. These documents, which revealed the inside story of the many intrigues and decentions to which Columbus was subjected, would not have been acceptible to him out side of Spain.

The style of this work is styler to that of the blatory of Golusius. Leving fait that a simple, detailed narrative, from which he kept all trace of his own opinions, would prove sout is teresting to the general render. Eat, none the less, the rester is guided by the discriminating aind of Irving, who interprets and dramatizes the extraordinary character of these dathorful explorers and paints in the colorful background of their exploits. The author succeeds to a remanuable degree in humanizing the period and nation of which as writes. The interest is the history developed as the result of strives. The interest is the history is any angland, as revealed is his vertous statones, had been isign of angland, as the result of strives. The interest is the history the interest is basin, on the other head, was directly attry. His interest is basin, on the other head, was directly attry. His interest is basin, on the other head, was directly attry to had be had result of he was able to convert the the induction of inspired he had result of heads and the other head, was directly at-

INVINUES REACTION TO SPANISH HISTORY AND PEOPLES

Washington Irving formed many lasting friendships at the Aussian Ministry while living at madrid. Irince Dolgoroud, a Russian attaché, and Irving found much in common, and Mis. Nol willer, a friend of the Russian Minister, was anothen influste.

+154+

From letters to both we get a glimpse of Irving's real reactions to Spanish history and environment in a way that he would not have revealed to a casual acquaintance. In 1828 he wrote to Prince Dolgorouki: "As I live in the neighborhood of the Library of the Jesuits' College of St. Isidoro, I pass most of my mornings there. 1. You cannot think what a delight I feel in passing through its galleries filled with old, parchment-bound books. It is a perfect wilderness of curiosity to me. What a deep-felt quiet luxury there is in delving into the rich ore of these old, neglected volumes. How these hours of uninterrupted intellectual enjoyment, so tranquil and independent, repay one for the ennui and disappointment too often experienced in the intercourse of society."

While writing "The Life and Voyages of Columbus" Irving first developed his intense interest in the Moorish invasion and occupation of Spain. As he travelled about Spain and studied with delight the remains of Moorish architecture on every hand, he came more and more to realize the indelible imprint which nine hundred years of Moorish domination had made upon the land and the people of Spain.

The letters and journals of Washington Irving at this period abound with bits of vivid description and enthusiastic appreciation of Spain and her people. It is not without reason that Charles Dudley Warner calls this: "The most fruitful period of Irving's life." It was entirely logical that Irving should now devote his attention to the long series of wars by which the Span-

1. Life and Letters of Washington Irving, Pierre M. Irving, p.277.

-155-

You literate to both we get a gliness of Inving's real reactions to Spenia history and environment in a way that he would not have revealed to a cascal acquisintance. In 1823 he wrote to Fain e baye revealed to a cascal acquisintance. In 1823 he wrote to Fain e desuite' College of St. Isidoro, I pans most of my mornings their 'ou exact think what a calight I feel in prasing through its gilleride "illed with old, piroheant-bound books. It is a pertract since is indermase of cariatty to as. That is deep-felt quict hurvolumes. Now these hours of unintercorrected intellectual enjoyment wolumes. Now these hours of unintercorrected intellectual enjoyment is france to or the part of the risk and the latellectual enjoyment is tranguli and independent, relation one for the const and discopointnt-

Maile writing "The Life and Voyages of Columbus" Irving first developed his intense interset in the Moortsh invasion and cooudstion of Spain. As he travelled some Duain and studied wit delight the remains of Moortah architecture on every Dand, he came more and more to realize the indelible imprint which mine the people of Spain.

The letters and journals of Taunington Irving at this partod acound with hits of vivid description and anthusiastic apprestation of Spain and her people. It is not without reason that "marked hidley Warner calls this "for most draftful seried of "rving"s life." It was entirely locical that Irving should now dvote his strention to the long series of wars by which the Spani. Life and to the long series of wars by which the Span-

-155-

iard finally put an end to Moorish domination. His study of Spanish history had already acquainted him with the outstanding facts of this struggle which had altered, while it also united, the national life of Spain. Always keenly alive to the possibilities of unusual personalities, Irving saw in Ferdinand and Isabella not only two significant royal personages, but also the living symbols of that force which had made Spain foremost among the nations of the fifteenth century.

Irving brought the unfinished manuscript of the "Conquest" with him to Seville, when he came there to be nearer the scene of the chronicle upon which he was engaged. His notebooks and letters amply prove that he was daily stimulated by actual contact with the land in which this epic struggle had occured. As he wrote about Granada he was actually resident in the old castle as the guest of the Spanish governor. He delighted equally in the chivalry and courage of Moor and Christian. He came to understand the extraordinary energy and piety of Queen Isabella and the deep respect with which she came to be regarded by Moor and Christian alike. He saw in the enmity of Muley Aben Hassan and his son Boabdil el Chico as important a factor in the downfall of the Moor as the relentless perseverance and strategy of Ferdinand himself.

End of Volume One

-156-

iard finally put an and to woorigh domination. His shady of Susiab history had siready acquatated his situ tos outstanding its ; of this strutgie which had siture, shile it also united, the national life of Costr. (usay) from) situe to the presimilities of unumal personal ties, irving som in Ferdinand and fackell not only two significant royal personages, but also the living symbols of the fifteenth and shad made from to remote anong the nations of the fifteenth and shad made from the share the symbols of the fifteenth continue.

Sindle Grought the unfinished manuacr's to of the "Congrest alth iim to Seville, when he came there to be marrer the second of the demonicie upon which he was engaged. His holescole and lattern sinks prove that he was engaged, his here coured. As that whe shout Graneds he was achaily strailated by setual conthe shous shout Graneds he was schuding resident in the old gasthe on the genet of the Spanish governor, de delighted enucly in the onivalry and courage of Woor and firistian. He came to which the interardiants energy and staty of Incen Isstella and the ine presence with which whe was to be reparded by soor and the ine presence with which whe was to be reparded by soor and the ine presence with which the endity of the delighted by soor and the ine presence with which the endity of the delighted by soor and the ine presence to the sew in the endity of the delighted by soor and the ine frage to the sew in the endity of the delighted by soor and the ine frage to the rescale of some and the delighted by soor and the ine frage to the sew in the endity of the delighted and the ine frage to the sew in the endity of the delighted and the ine frage to the rescale of the sevenes of the second and the ine frage to the restation between and a finite of the fail of the fact to the restation between and a finite of the forth and her affiles.

End of Volume One

-3.56-

